Sources in Local History
New Series Volume 35

THE LETTERS OF THE SMITH FAMILY, EMIGRANTS TO AUSTRALIA 1854–1891

Transcribed by
Richard Giles and Kenneth Veitch

with an introduction by
Kenneth Veitch and Keith Smith

The Letters of the Smith Family,
Emigrants to Australia, 1854-1891

Transcribed by
Richard Giles and Kenneth Veitch

Introduced by
Kenneth Veitch and Keith Smith

Edited by
Kenneth Veitch

First published in 2024 by
The European Ethnological Research Centre

University of Edinburgh
21 Buccleuch Place
Edinburgh EH8 9LN
Scotland

Sources in Local History
General editor: Kenneth Veitch

CONTENTS

FOREWORD

As a family, we have been fortunate to have forebears that were distinguished architects and builders in the Scottish Borders. In 1817 they built their own home 'Darnlee' in Darnick close to Melrose. Perhaps this has allowed us to keep more documents than might have otherwise been the case. Amongst these documents was a set of letters from some of the twelve emigrant members of the family who left the Borders for Australia in the mid-nineteenth century. These were written to my great-grandfather John Smith, farmer of Leaderfoot, who kept them along with the drafts of his replies.

Members of the family have since provided context to allow us to more fully understand this correspondence. These include the late Jean Lee, Gordon and Lewis Smith, and more recently Barabara Cullen, Ann Gray, Shaun Loney, Andrew Smith of Coogee, Jenny Purves Smith, Lorne Smith and Michael Smith AM.

As this correspondence illustrates aspects of both Border and Australian life of wider interest, we gave the 101 original letters to the National Library of Scotland in 2019. This gift is the origin of this volume published by the European Ethnological Research Centre.

Since 1852 many descendants of the correspondents in this tale have gone on to have illustrious careers and lead full lives both in Australia and the United Kingdom. Access to the carefully preserved and transcribed correspondence of their forebears is a legacy to us as a family. It is also a gift to a wider readership interested in emigrant Scots and those of their relatives who elected to continue their lives in the Scottish Borders.

Keith Smith
Darnick, August 2024

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The editor would like to thank Dr Heidi Egginton of the National Library of Scotland for bringing the letters to his attention and for photographing them so that they could be transcribed remotely.

Thanks are also due to Ann Gray for supplying a copy of Charles L. Smith's reminiscences, to Alison Smith for supplying a photograph of the portrait of John Smith of Leaderfoot, and to Rogan Inglis for digitising the other portraits of the Smith family. It is also a pleasure to thank Keith Smith for his help and advice.

The permission of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland to reproduce copies of the correspondence is also gratefully acknowledged.

EDITING

The current collection has been divided into three parts to reflect the three distinct periods in which the letters were written. The first contains three letters from the 1850s. Written by John Smith of Darnick and his son William, they survive only as transcripts. The second part, by far the largest, consists of letters sent between September 1869 and December 1879. The great majority of them were written by Adam and James Smith to their brother John of Leaderfoot, some of whose draft replies also survive. All but one of the letters in this section have been transcribed from originals first kept by John of Leaderfoot and now in the care of the National Library of Scotland. The third part comprises three letters written in 1891. Part of a correspondence between John of Leaderfoot and his nephew Charles, they too belong to the collection held by the NLS and have been transcribed from the originals.

The letters have been presented in a standardised format. Headers provide the name of the author and of the recipient and a number by which each letter can be identified. The salutations and valedictions have been reproduced as they appear in the originals, but the dates when the letters were sent have been standardised and placed immediately after the headers.

The original spelling, which is of a generally high standard throughout, has been retained. Words that have been misspelled but are readily recognisable have not been annotated. Missing letters have been inserted in [ ] only when the meaning of the word would otherwise be unclear or hinder easy reading. Sic has been used sparingly, mainly to indicate irregular or archaic spellings that might otherwise be mistaken for transcribing or typographical errors. For misspelled words that are not immediately obvious, or that might be confused with another word, the correct form is provided in [*i.e.*]. Where necessary for sense, missing words are supplied in [ ].

The original punctuation, which is of a much more variable quality, has also been retained, as it often reflects the mood of the writer and helps to convey the conversational nature of much of the correspondence. Idiosyncrasies include the omission of apostrophes not only in contractions such as ‘don’t’ and ‘won’t’, but also in possessives, and the erratic use or omission altogether of commas.

FAMILY TREE

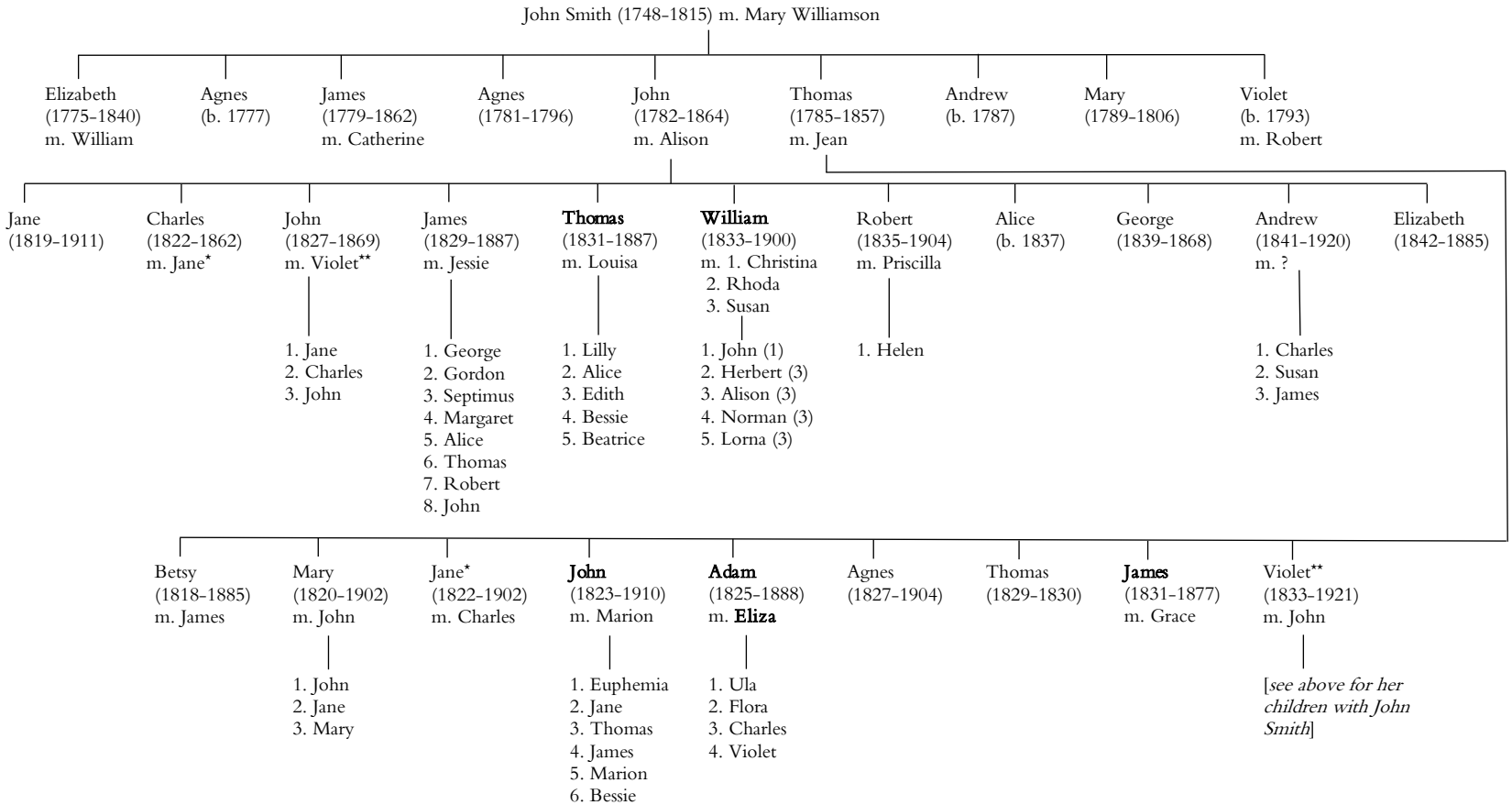
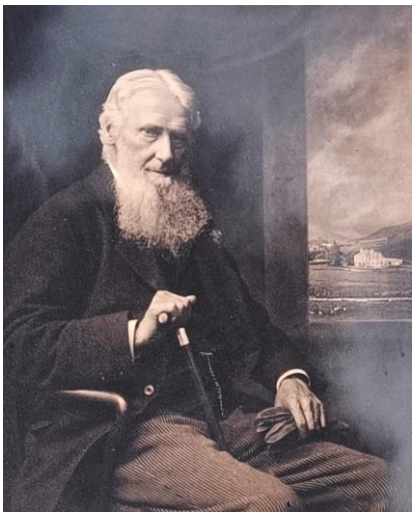


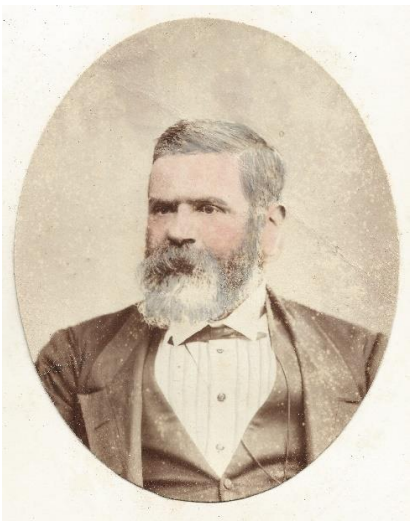
Table 1. The Smith family tree, abridged and simplified to show the people mentioned in the present collection of letters. The names of the authors of the letters have been given in bold font. (Based on a version compiled by Lewis Smith and revised by John Warren)

PORTRAIT GALLERY



John Smith (1823-1910)

The photograph was taken in later life when he was at Galalaw.

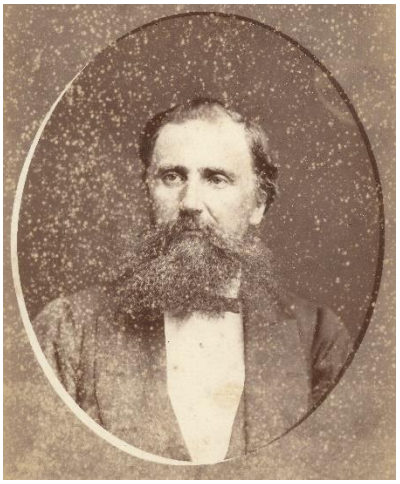


Adam Smith (1825-1888)

Taken in 1877, the photograph was hand coloured to add to its realism.

William Smith (1833-1900)

The photograph was taken at a studio in St Kilda, Melbourne.



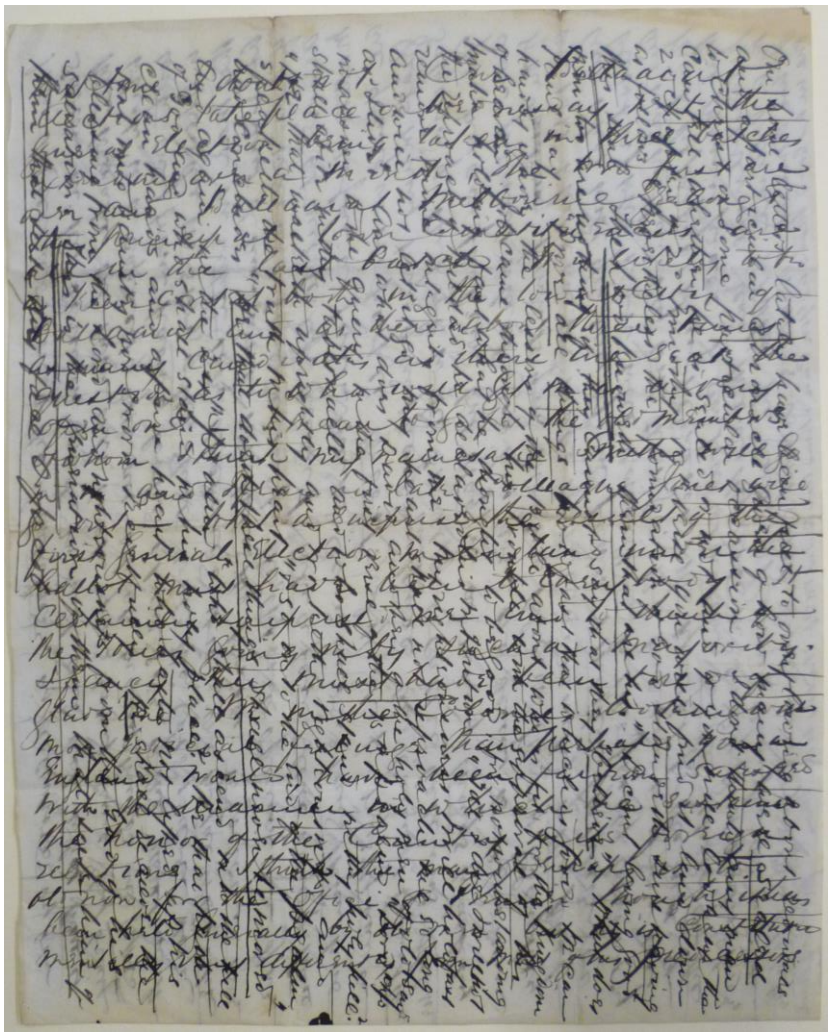
Thomas Smith (1831-1887)

'To Violet with Tom's love' was written on the back of the photograph.

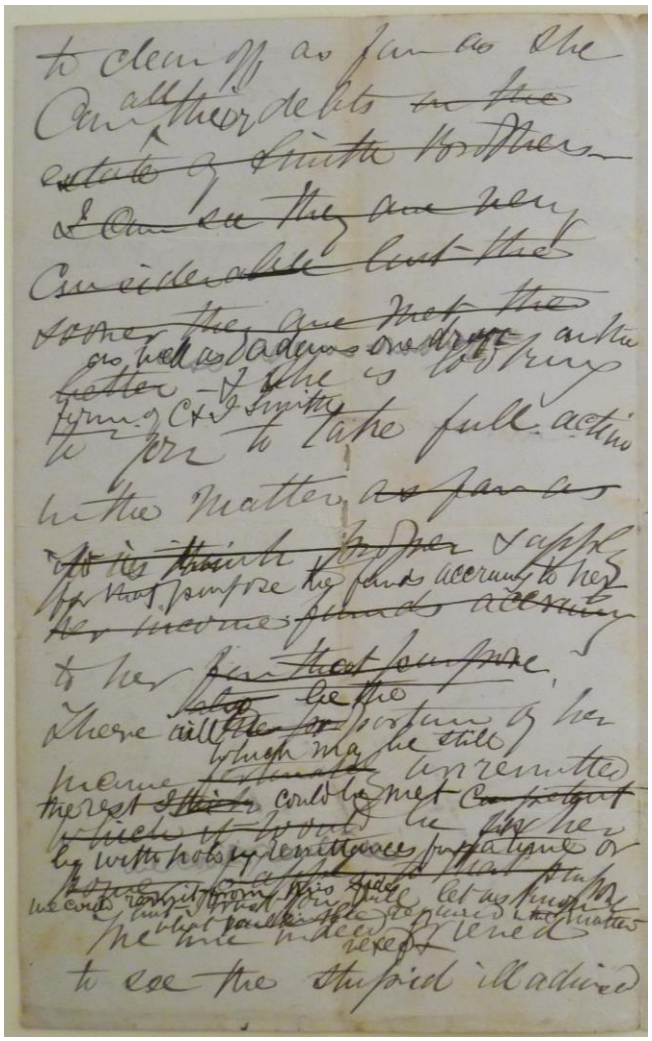
Violet Smith (1833-1921)
The photograph was taken in her early widowhood.

Charles L. Smith (1870-1948)
The photograph was probably taken when he was working at the Colonial Bank.

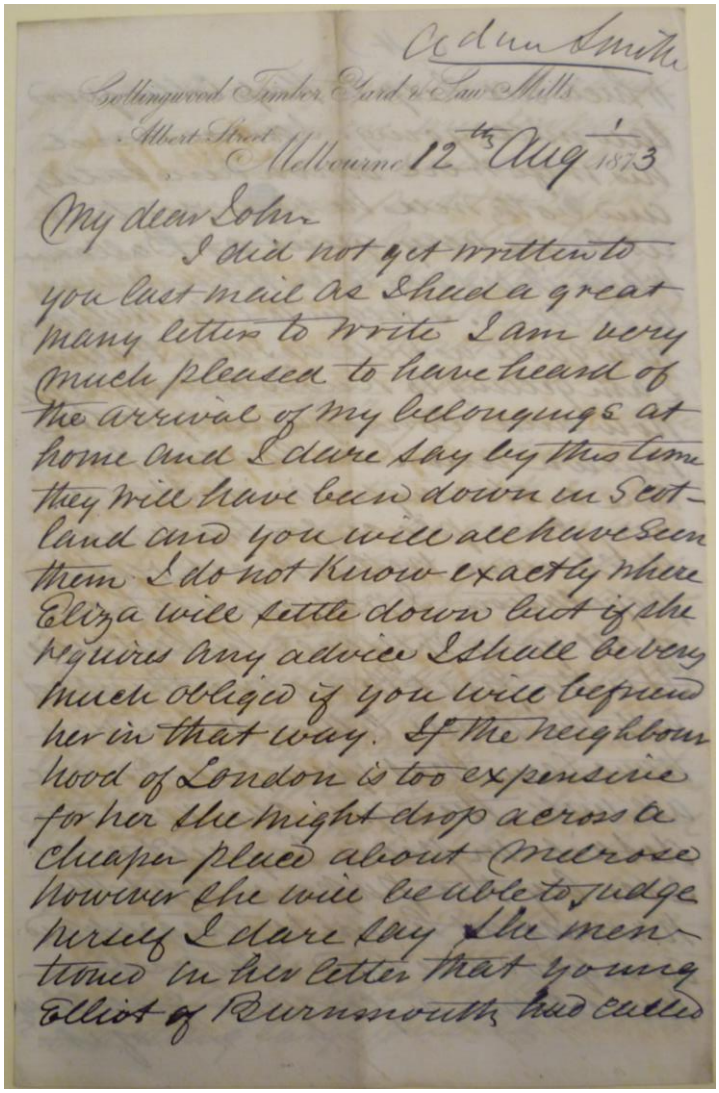
FACSIMILES



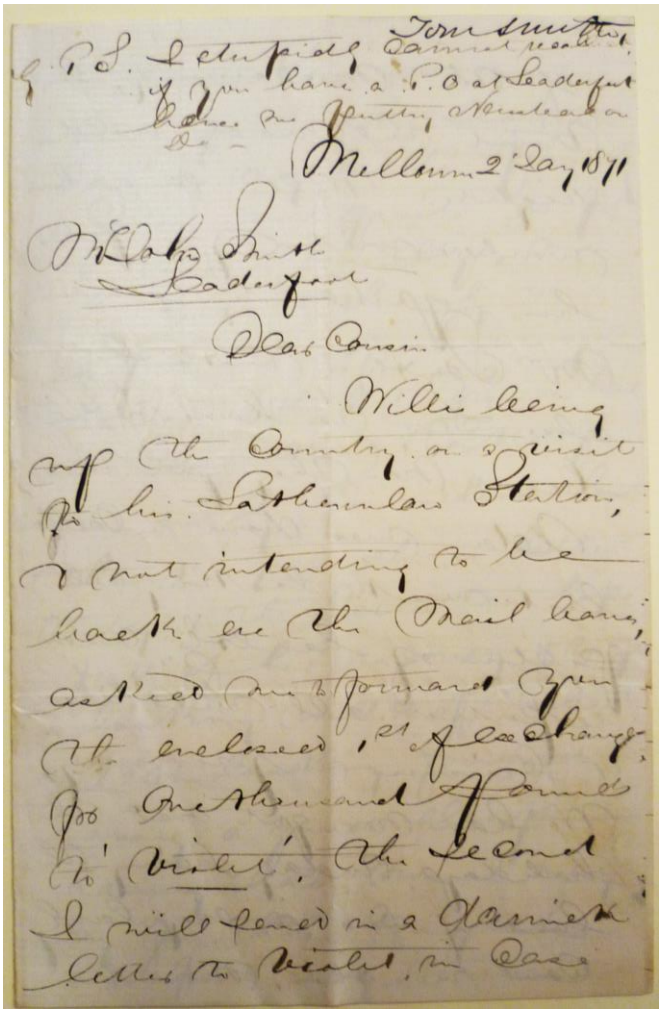
Facsimile 1. A cross-written page from a letter written by James Smith to his brother John Smith of Leaderfoot on 19 April 1874. Cross-writing saved money on both paper and postage. (Courtesy of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland)



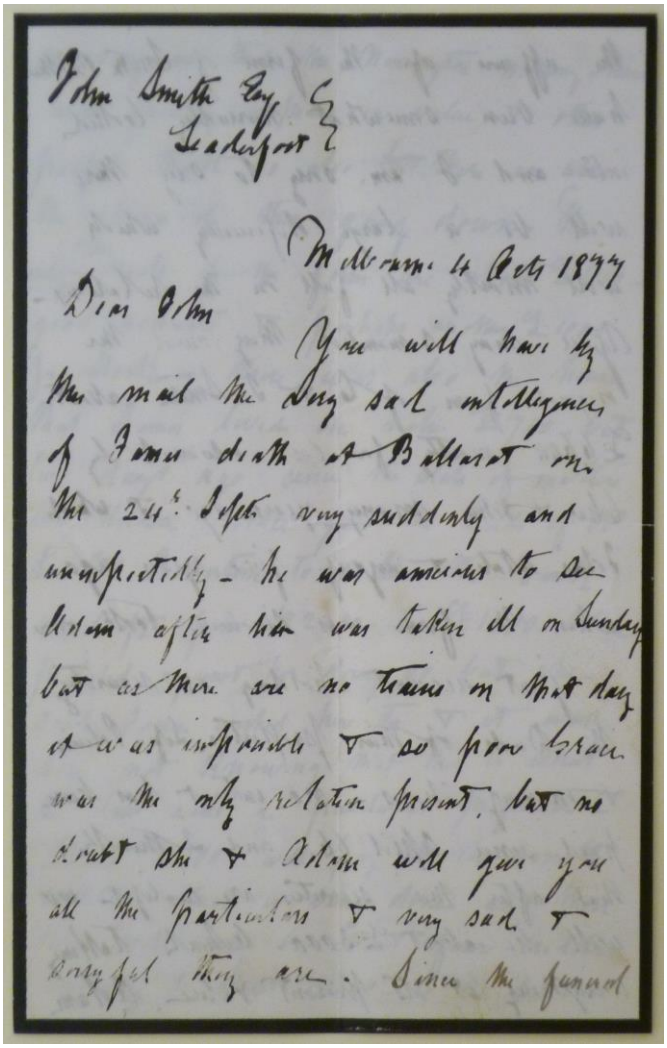
Facsimile 2. A heavily edited page from the draft of a letter written by John Smith of Leaderfoot to William Smith on 28 December 1878. (Courtesy of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland)



Facsimile 3. Adam Smith wrote in a clear, well-formed hand as shown on this page from a letter of 12 August 1873. (Courtesy of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland)



Facsimile 4. Thomas Smith wrote in a hand notable for its wide spacing and long, often looped entry strokes as shown on this page from a letter of 2 January 1871. (Courtesy of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland)



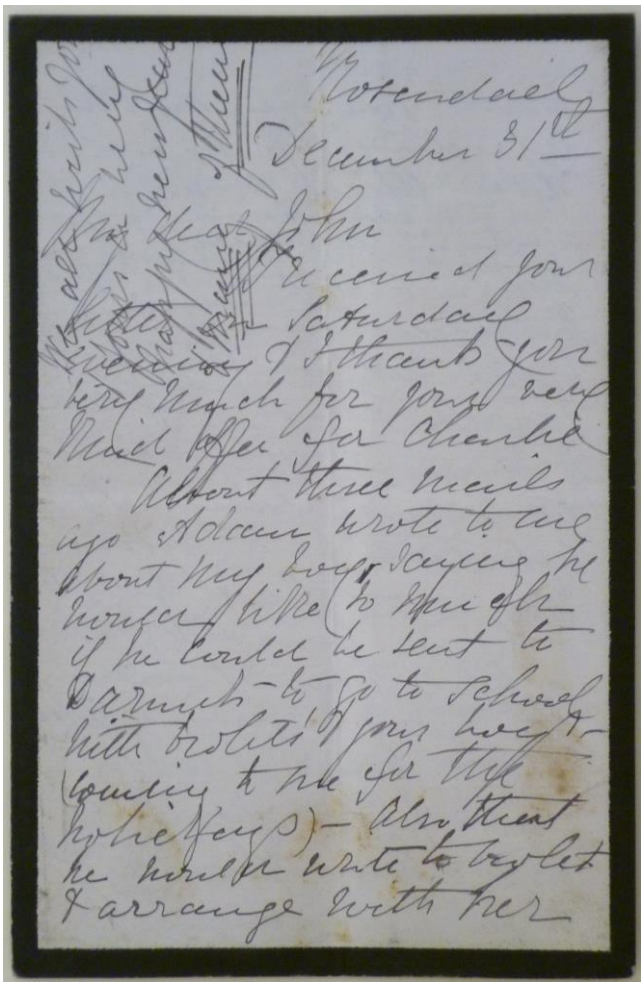
John Smith Esq
Leaderfoot

Melbourne 4 Oct 1877

Dear Sir

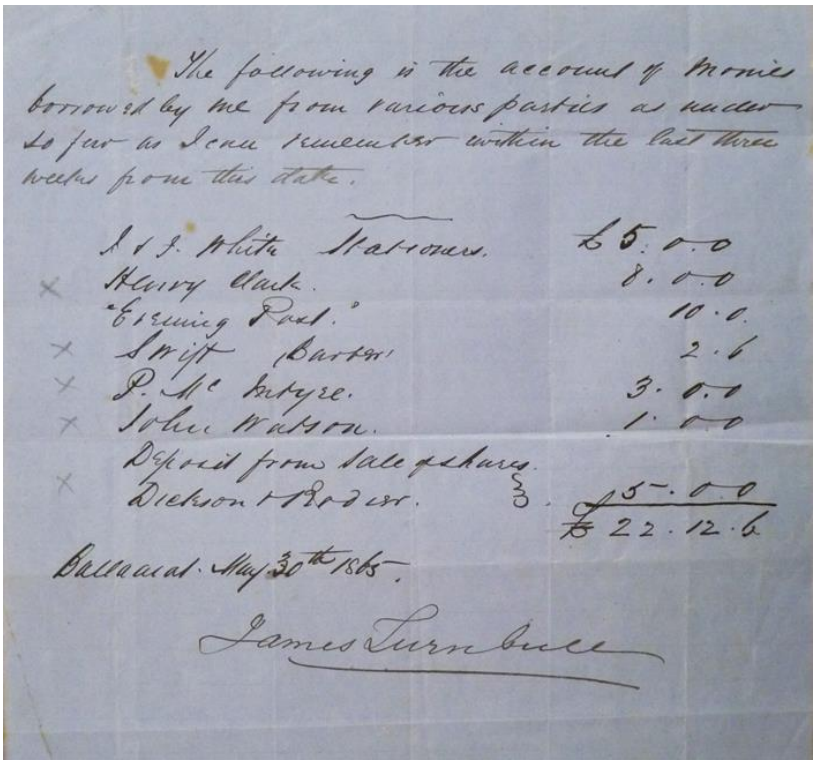
You will have by
the mail the very sad intelligence
of James death at Ballarat on
the 24th Sept very suddenly and
unexpectedly - he was anxious to see
Adam after he was taken ill on Sunday
but as there are no trains on that day
it was impossible & so poor Grace
was the only relation present, but no
doubt she & Adam will give you
all the particulars & very sad &
painful they are. Since the funeral

Facsimile 5. William Smith used black-edged mourning paper for the first letter he sent to John Smith of Leaderfoot following the death of James Smith. (Courtesy of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland)



Facsimile 6. Eliza Smith also used mourning paper for her letter replying to John Smith of Leaderfoot's suggestion that her children be schooled in Scotland. (Courtesy of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland)

Facsimile 7. The envelope in which Adam Smith's letter of 3 September 1879 was sent to John Smith of Leaderfoot. (Courtesy of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland)



The following is the account of monies borrowed by me from various parties as under so far as I can remember within the last three weeks from this date.

J & J. White Watsons.	£5. 0. 0
Henry Clark.	8. 0. 0
"Evening Post."	10. 0.
Swift (Barber)	2. 6
P. Mc Intyre.	3. 0. 0
John Watson.	1. 0. 0
Deposit from sale of shares.	
Dickson & Borer. 30	£5. 0. 0
	£ 22. 12. 6

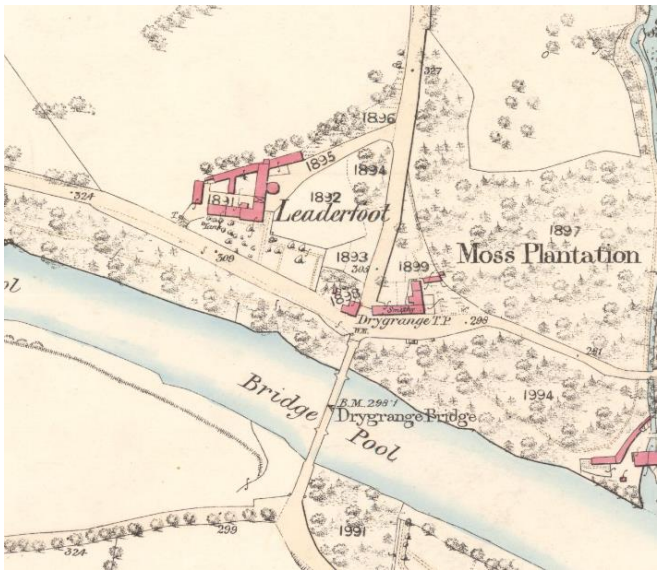
Ballarat. May 30th 1865.

James Turnbull

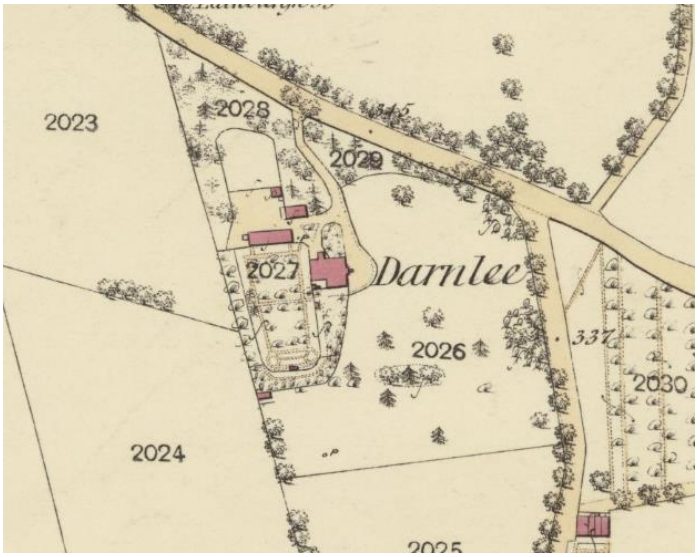
Facsimile 8. The list that James Smith obliged his cousin James Turnbull to sign of the monies he had borrowed and not repaid while in Australia. (Courtesy of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland)

MAPS

Map 1. A detail from the Ordnance Survey one inch to the mile map of Roxburghshire (1865) showing Melrose and surrounding settlements, including Darnlee and Leaderfoot.
(Courtesy of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland)



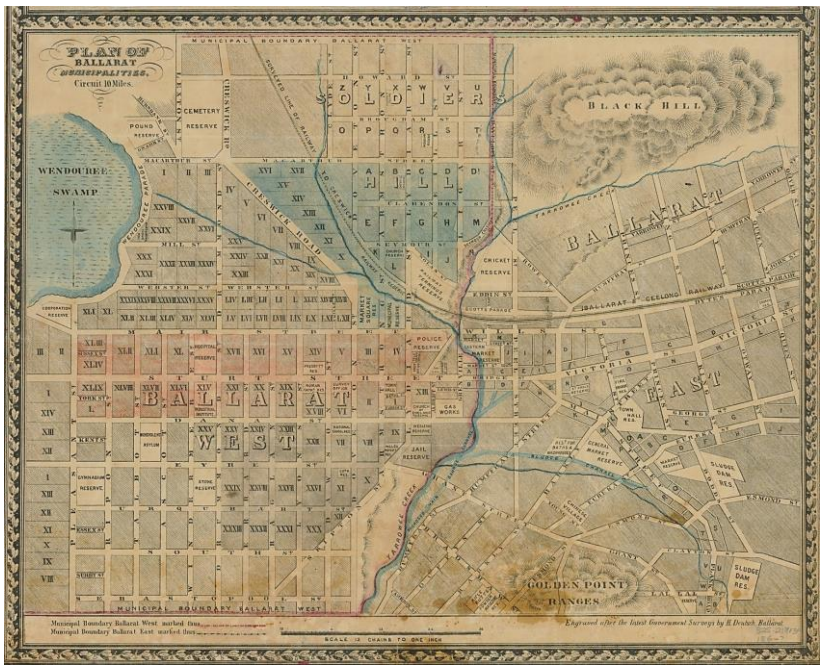
Map 2. A detail from the Ordnance Survey 25 inch to the mile map of Roxburghshire (1861) showing the farm buildings at Leaderfoot. (Courtesy of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland)



Map 3. A detail from the Ordnance Survey 25 inch to the mile map of Roxburghshire (1861) showing the house at Darnlee. (Courtesy of the Trustees of the National Library of Scotland)

Map 4. Map of Australia (1873). The boxed section shows Victoria with Ballarat and Melbourne circled in red. Other places mentioned in the letters, such as Cape Otway, Castlemaine and Sandhurst, can also be seen. (Wikimedia Commons)

Map 5. A detail from a map of Victoria (1876) showing the railway that connected Ballarat with Melbourne. Castlemaine, Geelong, Maryborough and other places mentioned in the letters can also be seen. (Wikimedia Commons)



Map 6. A plan of Ballarat (1860s). Doveton, Sturt, Lyon and other streets associated with Smith Brothers can be found in Ballarat West. (Courtesy of the State Library Victoria)

Map 7. A detail of a plan of Melbourne (1877). The location of the Collingwood Sawmill in Albert Street has been circled in red. (Courtesy of the University of Melbourne)

INTRODUCTION

During the 1850s, an estimated 90,000 Scots emigrated to Australia. Among them were twelve cousins from Darnick, a small village near Melrose in Roxburghshire. Their stories are briefly told here to provide context for the letters that follow.[1]

The origins of the Smith emigrants

The Darnick cousins who emigrated to Australia were all children of either John or Thomas Smith (see Family Tree). John and Thomas were brothers, born in the parish of Melrose in 1782 and 1785, respectively, to John Mason Smith and his wife Mary Williamson. Their father was the second last Master Mason of Scotland; James, another of his sons, being the last to hold that office. The family has been traced back to 1613 and Androw Smith. Many of them rest in graves in the grounds of Melrose Abbey.

It was in the village of Darnick that John and Thomas went into practice as J. & T. Smith, architects, sculptors and builders.[2] Their work in the locality is still widely known, not least the many bridges they built and the work they undertook for the poet and novelist Sir Walter Scott on his home Abbotsford, on the banks of the River Tweed. They also built a family home for themselves in Darnick in 1817. Known as 'Darnlee', it remains in the possession of the Smith family to this day.

The children of John Smith

John Smith and his wife Alison Purves had fourteen children,[3] eight of whom emigrated to Australia. Their two eldest sons, Charles and John, were the first to leave, aged about twenty-eight and twenty-three years, respectively. John senior wrote in his diary on 22 April 1850, 'Set out early for Edin[burgh] with Charles and John on the journey for Australia'.[4] They were to sail from Liverpool on the *Argyle*, a newly built sailing packet that was 'fitted up with every comfort and convenience for cabin, intermediate, and steerage passengers' and was 'provisioned under the inspection of her Majesty's Emigration Agent'.[5] On reaching Liverpool the following day, Charles and John were instructed by the shipping agent to obtain the 'necessary things for the voyage'.[6] John senior noted in his diary that his sons also 'fixed on the room they were to have' on board the ship, which suggests that they travelled as either cabin or intermediate passengers. He left them in Liverpool for a few days while he did business in Wales, expecting to see them again before they departed. In his diary entry for 26 April, however, he noted somewhat forlornly, 'Left for Liverpool by train. Could not find my sons in Liverpool. Left at 2.30 for Carlisle'. They were somewhere in the city, however, as the *Argyle* did not sail until 28 April.

The diary provides no clue as to what motivated Charles and John to emigrate, and none of the letters they presumably sent home have survived. Other men from the Scottish Borders had already settled in Australia, some of whom were known to the Smiths. Among them were Walter Bell, a builder from near Jedburgh who had established a successful business in Melbourne, and the brothers Andrew and Robert Chirnside, farmers from Berwickshire who had purchased a number of stations (large farms used for livestock production) in the Port Phillip District during the 1840s.[7] Perhaps reports of the success of such emigrants had convinced Charles and John that Australia was a land of opportunity. Their decision might equally have been influenced by poor prospects at home, either in the family firm or more widely.

The *Argyle* arrived at Port Phillip on 19 August 1850. At that time, the port and the adjacent settlement of Melbourne were part of the Port Phillip District of New South Wales. On 30 November that year, however, it was announced that the District was to separate from New South Wales, a decision that sparked rejoicing in Melbourne: 'Never before or since has there been such a night of revel,' one commentator later recalled.[8] The following year was to be an eventful one for the city and its hinterland. On 6 February 1851, 'Black Thursday', the District experienced a major bush fire that resulted in about a quarter of its area 'being overwhelmed with fire and smoke as if a destroying angel had winged its way through the air, scattering firebrands far and wide'.[9] The discovery of payable gold at Bathurst in New South Wales less than seven days later dealt Melbourne another blow. Large numbers of able-bodied men left their jobs in the city to join the diggings, resulting in a slump in the local economy. Not long after the separation from New South Wales took effect on 1 July 1851, gold was discovered at various sites across what was now known as the Colony of Victoria. This too occasioned an exodus of people from Melbourne, as 'Labourers struck work, clerks deserted their desks, and "counter-jumpers" jumped away, all dreaming of nothing but the road to fortune', leading to the fear that it and the Colony's other main settlement at Geelong 'would be drained of all their male population, and garrisoned only by women and girls'.[10] These local fortune-hunters were joined by an influx of 'diggers' from other parts of Australia and, more significantly, from overseas.[11] If businesses in Melbourne suffered from manpower shortages in the short term, vacancies were soon filled by emigrants not interested in digging for gold. Indeed, the population of the city expanded from *c.*23,000 in 1851 to *c.*80,000 three years later.

John senior noted in his diary for 18 February 1853, 'Got the gold from Australia, 12 oz.'.[12] If it was sent to him by Charles or John, then they had not mined it themselves, as unlike many of their fellow emigrants, they did not go to the goldfields. Instead, they decided to establish themselves as timber merchants. Early evidence of their new venture can be found in a list of goods that arrived in Melbourne on board a ship from Leith in November 1851,

which included the entry, '1 box joiner's tools, C and J Smith'.[13] A shipment of timber followed from the same port a few months later, John senior noting in his diary on 28 September 1852 that, '[I] went to Edinburgh by train, looked at the timber prepared for my sons in Australia'.[14]

Adverts for the firm of C. and J. Smith, timber merchant, began to appear in the Melbourne press from June 1853 onwards, and they show that the brothers were taking full advantage of the construction boom by selling a wide range of building materials. Doors, window frames, floorboards, weatherboards, slates, lead, bricks, plaster, chimneypieces, mantelpieces, cement, and laths were just some of the materials they supplied. The quantities were impressive. In one edition of *The Argus*, they advertised for sale 100,000 feet of lining-boards and weatherboards, 30,000 feet of superior cedar, 20,000 slates, and 2,000 doors and window frames.[15]

Much of this material was imported. In 1854, for example, they received 400 bricks and thirty loads of floorboards from Glasgow,[16] and 300 slates from Liverpool.[17] Timber was imported from north America and the Baltic, while the Kauri beams they were selling in 1854 would have come from trees grown in New Zealand. Other material came from closer at hand, such as the 998 blue gum felloes[18] that arrived from Sydney in March 1856.[19] Charles and John also imported equipment and machinery, such as the grindstone, sixty-five pieces of machinery and two cases of (presumably smaller pieces of) machinery shipped from Leith in 1855[20] and the wood-cutting machine shipped from Liverpool in 1860.[21]

The business grew. From 1854 onwards, C. and J. Smith frequently placed notices in the wanted columns of local newspapers for drays, wagons, and bullock- and horse-teams to transport their material to Bendigo, Castlemaine, Yackandandah and other thriving centres of the Victorian gold rush.[22] When the bullock-teams gathered in the yard it presented 'as much the appearance of a cattle dealers close as anything else' (Letter I.2). The cost of transporting timber by such means was considerable – from £20[23] to £40 per ton in 1854 – but such was the demand that it paid. Adverts also appeared around this time for new employees, including ones for 'a man to attend the steam engine' and 'an experienced man to work circular saws'.[24] The brothers also invested in sawmills outwith Melbourne. In 1855, John Hay Goodlet, a native of Leith who had emigrated to Melbourne in 1852 and found employment as a clerk with C. and J. Smith, commenced a timber yard and sawmill in Sydney in partnership with Charles and John.

Perhaps persuaded by news of their brothers' thriving business, Thomas (aged twenty-two) and William (aged twenty) decided to join them in Melbourne. Once again, John senior accompanied his departing sons as far as Liverpool, where they set sail on 5 June 1854 on board the *Morning Star*. They had secured berths in a shared cabin, which was one step down in class from a saloon cabin but notably better than travelling in steerage. The food, for one,

was better and it also gave them certain privileges, including access to the poop deck. The *Morning Star* arrived in Port Phillip on 21 August after a journey 'conducted in a manner most satisfactory to the four hundred passengers who came out in her to these colonies'.[25]

The letter William sent to his mother on 8 September 1854 is the first one to appear in the present collection. In it he first recalled his eleven-week voyage, at least as much as could be reported home to mother. He was happy with the food, not least the daily plum duff, a relative of the modern Christmas pudding. Of the drinking water he wrote:

> The water was not so bad as I supposed, neither was the allowance so stinted, being quite enough for ordinary purposes, and it tasted not so bad with a little vinegar in it to kill the livestock which we saw quite well with naked eyes, but the vinegar soon settled them and was a great improvement to the water. One soon gets accustomed to drink that kind of water. (Letter I.1)

William encountered English, Irish, Italian and Swiss passengers on the voyage out. In his opinion, the 'foreigners' were the best behaved, by whom he clearly meant the continental Europeans, as he considered 'the low English and Irish with the exceptions of the Jews' generally the worst. Ideas of class and correct modes of behaviour probably coloured these comments more than general views on ethnicity, as he admired and made friends with the English in his own cabin and, some years later, he was happy to accept an invitation from a bank colleague to attend a Jewish wedding in Melbourne.

The first sight of Australia was not till,

> On the 74th day out by nautical time we came in sight of the light house off Cape Ottway [*sic*] in a direct line before us, thus proving our captain to be a first[-rate] navigator as he was a very fine fellow. (Letter I.1)

On landing in Melbourne, William once more experienced the multi-cultural nature of colonial society. As well as a 'great many Germans', whom he approvingly noted were 'very respectable and quiet', he encountered 'swarms' of Chinese, his choice of word reflecting not only prejudices common to many Europeans at the time, but also specific concerns in Victoria about the number of Chinese arriving to work in the goldfields. A more reassuring sight was his brother John 'in colonial costume high outside top boots and broad brimmed straw hat looking very much as at home, fresh coloured and looking well altho not very fat' (Letter I.1).

Figure 1. A view of Melbourne taken from the roof of Parliament House in 1862. The white, open-fronted building in the centre of the photograph housed the sawmills and timber yard of C. and J. Smith.
(Courtesy of the State Library Victoria)

William was clearly impressed by the success of his brothers' business, noting proudly to his mother that they 'do a first rate trade paying about £50 a week to Draymen alone for bringing goods from the wharf' and have 'about 3,000 doors and windows in the store just now selling very fast as we have the best assortment in town'. She would no doubt also have been pleased to learn that they had 'got the credit of being honest men to deal with, which is a very great admission here, where it is the custom to look on every man as a knave'.

In a letter written to his mother a month later, William confirmed his first impressions of a thriving business:

> The timber trade still goes on flourishingly enough and at a good profit too in proof of which Chas. and John have just erected a new office in the front corner of the store as the last one was too small, being merely the verandah of the house enclosed. (Letter I.2)

He went on to note that Charles spent most of his time at the wharf, 'buying and selling, and pushing about', which suggests that brother John oversaw the day-to-day operations of the sawmill and its workers. Their respective roles as merchant and works manager might explain why, according to William, Charles was known to most people as 'Mr Smith' and John as 'just plain John'.

William had a keen eye and was eager to tell his mother how Melbourne society was different to the one back home:

> You would be astonished to see the different people about Melbourne with their free and easy manner and general equality one with another, the working class here being generally very wealthy and mostly all of them with gold chains and rings about them even men selling oranges etc. at the corner of the streets. (Letter I.1)

Perhaps foretelling his later career in banking, his first two letters were also full of the prices of various items and services in Melbourne. In common with many newly arrived emigrants, he was surprised by how expensive some of these items were, especially food, unaware that the demands of a rapidly growing population had driven up prices.

Thomas' letters to his mother do not survive, so his first impressions of Melbourne are unknown. Although he was offered work at his brothers' sawmill, farming was his main interest, and within a month or so of landing he was in Bacchus Marsh (*c.*53 km west of Melbourne) examining some land for sale. He clearly liked what he saw, as he bought the land, established the farm of Green Hills on it and remained there for a number of years.[26] During this time, he joined the Port Phillip Pastoral Society and invested in various other properties both in the Wimmera district (western Victoria) and elsewhere.[27] He returned to the family firm only to leave a few years later, an exit that either resulted from or caused a reported rift between him and some of his brothers. Indeed, his cousin Adam later observed that, 'Tom dislikes his brothers as much as a certain person does Holy Water' (Letter II.74).

Thomas had political ambitions and put himself forward as a candidate for West Bourke in 1871. He was unsuccessful but tried again for the same constituency in 1874, only to lose by just twenty votes against one of the incumbents. A third attempt in 1877 also failed despite a vigorous campaign. Cousin Adam believed that he gave out his political views 'too openly' (Letter II.24), although in the opinion of one local newspaper the problem lay elsewhere: 'Mr Smith being a quiet speaker … does not attempt to rouse enthusiasm. Indeed he prosecutes his canvass under great disadvantage owing to his inability to throw more vigour into his manner of speaking'.[28]

The next two Smith brothers to sail to Australia were Robert (aged twenty) and George (aged sixteen). They appear to have arrived in Melbourne in 1855 and been given employment at C. and J. Smith. Their letters home do not survive but they were no doubt impressed by the scale of their brothers' premises in Albert Street, which were described in a rate book from the period as having 'timber yards, steam saw mill with 2 site [*illegible*] turning lathe and plane machine, 2 large sheds over floored and 3 rooms over gateway with offices and tram roads'.[29]

Not long after arriving in Melbourne, Robert was made a partner alongside Thomas and William in a new family venture: William Smith & Company, which from around 1857 to 1870 operated the Carlton Sawmill and

Timber Yard in Melbourne. His abilities also saw him rise to become the manager of Collingwood Sawmill and the active partner in C. and J. Smith.

James, the seventh brother to arrive, landed in 1857 (aged twenty-eight). He was not in Melbourne for long before he too was made a partner in a family-backed timber firm. In 1859, the aforementioned partnership between Charles and John Smith and John Hay Goodlet in Sydney was dissolved and replaced with one between Goodlet and James. 'Success attended the firm from the beginning',[30] and over the years Goodlet & Smith expanded their business to include three sawmills, wharfs, a brickwork, and a pottery that produced drainpipes, tiles, chimney pots and stoneware. Adverts in Sydney newspapers show that they also sold building materials, including doors, window frames, skirting-boards, bricks, tiles, plaster, and cement.[31]

James suffered a severe personal setback when he was involved in a railway accident in the late 1860s, but after convalescing back home in Darnick with his wife and children, he resumed an active role in Goodlet & Smith. By nature a shy and retiring man who only appeared in public when obliged to do so,[32] James was nonetheless widely admired for his business sense, and the continued success of his firm enabled him to buy 'Shrublands', a grand house set in nine acres of land in the suburb of Marrickville.[33]

James was followed to Australia by Jane (also known as Jeanie/Jeany), who came to keep house for her brothers in Melbourne and stayed for a number of years. Her father John Smith senior wrote to her from Scotland in June 1859:

> I hope you will pay us a visit before long, if not to remain with us altogether, which last I would prefer, but you are of so much use to your brothers and so much appreciated, that the wish is almost a selfish one. (Letter I.3)

He speculated that his sons in Australia would probably be getting married soon, although with regards to Charles he noted, 'as far as Mother and I can understand him, he has no engagements as yet nor any prospect of the kind'. Charles was in Darnick when this letter was written, and either through his parents' influence or to their surprise he duly married his first cousin Jane in Melrose in November 1859. Charles was not alone in marrying a first cousin: John followed his lead three years later when he married Jane's sister Violet, also in Melrose. Seeking a bride at home was a not uncommon practice among Scottish emigrants across the British Empire, especially in new or expanding colonies, where male emigrants tended to outnumber female emigrants by some margin.[34]

The next three Melbourne Smiths to marry found Australian-born brides, although all of them had Scottish connections. In March 1867, Thomas married Louisa Anne Hoffman. She was the daughter of Louisa Christie, a native of Edinburgh, and William Hoffman, a German immigrant who had made his

money as a butcher in Melbourne before expanding his interests into cattle stations and land. William Hoffman was known for keeping a close guard on his daughter's interests, so Thomas must have been viewed as a man of some credibility. The letters suggest that a close relationship developed between the two men and in the early 1870s Thomas and Louisa moved to Essendon (*c.*8 km north west of Melbourne), where Hoffman owned a house and a 320-acre estate.

William and Robert followed Charles and John's lead by marrying sisters. Christina and Priscilla Jane Macpherson were the daughters of John Macpherson, a wealthy pastoralist who had emigrated from Scotland to Australia in 1825. William's marriage to Christina in 1869, which was held at Helena House, the Macpherson's residence in Melbourne, was a 'real Scotch wedding' for which the wealthy Macpherson family had 'opened their purse strings' (Letter II.1). Helena House was also the venue for Robert's wedding to Priscilla Jane in 1873. The newlyweds spent their honeymoon in Darnick, and it was here that their daughter Helen was born on 17 April 1874.[35]

Charles was destined to see only one of his brothers marry. He died on 13 February 1862 at a lodging house in Macquarie Street, Hobart, while visiting C. and J. Smith's operations in the Tasmanian capital. Within the year, both his wife Jane and his brother and long-time business partner John had returned to Darnick.[36] John established a new home with his wife Violet at Tower Cottage. Here he played an active role in various local charities, including the Leaderfoot Navvy Mission and the Vagrant Society. He was also interested in education, visiting the village school on a number of occasions and participating in the Association for Conducting Popular Lectures and the Young Men's Mutual Improvement Society.[37] Late in 1868, or perhaps early the following year, he would have received the news that his brother George had died in Melbourne, aged just twenty-nine years.[38] Interestingly, the newspaper notices that announced his death and the inscription on the stone marking his grave in the city's General Cemetery highlighted that he was the 'son of the late John Smith, Architect, Darnick, Scotland'.

John did not long survive George. He died of tuberculosis on 8 May 1869 in Bournemouth, England, where he had taken up temporary residence with his sister Jane, no doubt in an attempt to alleviate his condition. His body was returned to Scotland to be buried at Melrose Abbey. A statement compiled by William listing his deceased brother's assets in Victoria shows that he had invested in shares and property, as well as in the sawmills established by the family in Ballarat and Sydney. John bequeathed his property in Victoria, including his share in the firm of C. and J. Smith, to his wife Violet, along with 'a special legacy of four thousand pounds sterling to be used or disposed of as she sees right'.[39] Reflecting on his death, the *Kelso Chronicle* highlighted the charitable aspect of his character: 'Few events have created a deeper grief among the many friends who valued his kindness and intelligence or spread a greater

sorrow over the village where he lived doing good … nursing its schools and fostering its charities'.[40] Violet continued in the same vein, most notably by financing the building of a substantial village hall in Darnick,[41] but also by paying for the education of her brother Adam's children (see below).

In 1870, Robert, Thomas and William were named as the remaining partners of C. and J. Smith.[42] Two years later, the partnership was dissolved when William decided to leave the business. A new one was established with cousin Adam taking his place, the reasons for which are outlined below. The firm continued to thrive amidst all these changes thanks to a building boom in Melbourne that was fuelled partly by a growing population, partly by pastoralists investing their new-found wealth in the city, and partly by an ambitious programme of public works. In 1877, the partnership was again dissolved, and the business carried on by Robert alone. Three years later, he decided to sell the firm and on 23 June 1880 an auction was held of its large stock of timber and building materials.[43] The sawmill and associated sheds, shops and engine-house were bought by another timber merchant, Sutor & Turnbull.

James of Sydney was the next of the brothers to die. He had retired from Goodlet & Smith in 1882, never having fully recovered from his railway accident. Even so, he appears to have grown tired of a life of leisure, as during a tour of Europe in 1886 he talked of re-entering business when he got home to Sydney. His health declined rapidly on his return, however, and he died on 31 July 1887, aged fifty-eight years. His life was commemorated in *Australian Men of Mark*, a publication of 1889 that provided the people of the 'Australasian colonies' with a 'historico-biographical record of their growth and progress, and of the lives of those of their representative men who have achieved prominence or distinction during the first hundred years of our history'.[44] A window was also installed in his memory in the Congregational Church in Marrickville.

Thomas died later the same year, on 5 September, at his home in St Kilda, Melbourne. After stepping down from an active role in C. and J. Smith, he spent his time looking after his own investments and soon became 'a gentleman well known in financial circles'.[45] He was appointed to the board of directors of the National Bank of Australasia in 1872 and of the Land Mortgage Bank of Victoria in 1885. He also served as a justice of the peace. Interestingly, his obituary highlighted his famous Scottish connections:

> Mr Smith's father, who died some time ago, was one of the leading architects of Melrose, near Edinburgh, which was the native place of Mr Smith himself. His father was an intimate friend of Sir Walter Scott, and it was mainly through his endeavors that Abbotsford was restored for Sir Walter.[46]

William died of pneumonia on 20 January 1900 in Montreux, Switzerland, during a tour of Europe that had begun two years earlier. He had made his money partly through investments, mainly in New South Wales squatting ventures. Described on his death as being 'especially prominent in financial circles' in Melbourne,[47] he had held directorships in the Colonial Bank since 1869, the Metropolitan Gas Company since its inception in 1877, and the Kauri Timber Company since 1890, and was involved in various other businesses including a brickwork and a life assurance firm.[48]

William's death meant that Robert was the last of the twelve emigrant Smith cousins remaining in Australia. He had spent some of his early retirement touring Europe with his wife Priscilla Jane. They were accompanied by their daughter Helen, who was returning to Darnick for her education, probably at the nearby Glenview School. After a further period of schooling in Germany, she returned to Australia to live with her parents, latterly at 'Beleura', a grand mansion and estate that Robert had bought in Mornington, south of Melbourne. In December 1901, Helen married William Schutt at the Scots' Church, in Toorak, the Melbourne suburb where Robert and Priscilla Jane had their city home.[49] It was in Toorak that Robert died on 17 June 1904, aged sixty-nine years.[50]

The sons of Thomas Smith

Most of the letters in the present collection were sent to John Smith, the eldest son of the aforementioned architect and builder Thomas (1785-1857) and his wife Jean Turnbull (see Family Tree). As a young man, John worked alongside his father in the family firm. He soon realised, however, that he would rather be a farmer, and for the rest of his working life he tenanted various farms: Kittyfield and Leaderfoot on the River Tweed, Mowhaugh deep in the Cheviot Hills, and finally Galalaw near Kelso.[51] All but two of the surviving letters sent to John date to when he held the joint tenancies of Kittyfield and Leaderfoot. These combined farms ran to *c.*580 acres and to help him work them John employed eight men, three women and two boys. These full-time farm servants would have been joined at busy times of the year by a number of seasonal workers.

John was a member of the Melrose Farmers' Club, which held monthly meetings to discuss and respond to issues effecting local agriculture. He was one of the speakers at the meeting held in November 1865 to discuss the 'cattle plague' that was sweeping across Britain in 1865,[52] and again at the meeting held in October 1869 to discuss the effect on tenants' rights and powers that proposed changes to agricultural might have.[53] The Club also arranged annual ploughing matches, which attracted a large number of entrants as well as spectators.[54] At the 1868 match, one of John's ploughmen won second place in the 'young men' category.[55]

John also belonged to the Highland and Agricultural Society of Scotland. Through its publications and annual shows, the Society sought to disseminate agricultural knowledge and encourage a spirit of competition and emulation among Scotland's farmers. Although John was not listed among the prize winners at any of its national shows during his tenures at Kittyfield and Leaderfoot, he did receive local recognition for the quality of his cattle at the Earlston Winter Fat Stock Show of 1873.[56] While at Galalaw, he and his son James won prizes at both national and regional shows for their Border Leicester sheep.[57]

On 4 March 1863, while he was at Kittyfield, John married Mary Ann (or Marion) Carmichael, a native of Berwick-upon-Tweed whose brother farmed Longnewton in the nearby parish of Ancrum. John and Mary Ann later lived at the farmhouse of Leaderfoot and it was here that she died in June 1871, leaving John (then aged forty years) with six young children. Brother James wrote from Australia in sympathy,

> I do not know what comfort to give you under the circumstances for left with the lot of youngsters to look after all on your own hook it is a great task and one that you will want the help of our father who art in heaven to do. (Letter II.10)

As it turned out, earthly help was on hand in the shape of their sister Agnes, who came to Leaderfoot to help raise the children. Their nephew, Charles L. Smith, remembered them both fondly from his time at Leaderfoot: 'Uncle John was a dear, so was aunt Aggie and they were very earnest'.[58]

Outside work and home, John of Leaderfoot got involved in the life of the community. He was a member of the Border Elders' Union of the Church of Scotland, which met twice yearly to discuss current issues affecting the Church, to collect and diffuse information relevant to the Church's mission, and to promote good fellowship. He was also the secretary of the Melrose Colportage Association, which had been established in 1857 with the aim of distributing religious tracts and books among the people of the district. He also served on the board of directors for the chain bridge that had been built over the River Tweed in 1826 by his father's firm of J. and T. Smith. When he died in August 1910, aged eighty-seven years, John was remembered in his obituary for being an 'amiable and unassuming' man who was 'dignified without being soft', and for his generosity:

> The worldly possessions with which he was liberally endowed he dealt with not as if they were meant entirely for his own benefit or gratification but rather as a trust in which others should share faithfully. He discharged his stewardship in this respect and unostentatiously too for most of his benefactions found little fame being known alone to himself and the recipients.[59]

John was apparently content to stay in Scotland despite being urged to find a farm in Australia.[60] His brothers Adam and James felt differently, although it is interesting to note that they waited until 1859 to emigrate,[61] by which time they were thirty-four and twenty-eight years old, respectively. It was in 1859 that their cousin Charles visited Darnick (and married their sister Jane), and it may have been his stories of life in Melbourne (perhaps accompanied by an offer of employment at C. and J. Smith) that encouraged Adam and James to relocate to Victoria.

The earliest surviving letter sent home by either Adam or James dates to 10 September 1869, by which time they were living in Ballarat. The city owed its origins to the discovery of gold in the neighbourhood in 1851. Within two years, the previously rural district had a population of around 25,000 people, mostly male prospectors intent on striking it rich. The settlement had a rough and ready quality, with the prospectors for the most part residing in sprawling shanty settlements. This changed during the late 1850s, however, when the discovery of deep leads led to the development of a more permanent and ordered settlement.

Ballarat had a well-established Scottish community. Indeed, Scots had been a notable presence in the region since before the discovery of gold, as one not entirely sympathetic commentator noted in 1858:

> We give the Scotch such unbounded credit for enterprise and the quality which their own word "canny" so well expresses, that we are not surprised to find a host of Scotchmen on whatever shore we may step, where money is to be made … This colony, before the gold discovery, was almost entirely Scotch. An immense majority of squatters were Scotch, and remain so still. The principal merchants are Scotch; there is the same preponderance of the North Briton amongst the medical men and officers of the colony; the publicans are almost entirely Scotch and Irish. On the diggings Scotland has no lack of representatives; and they are everywhere, in all professions, careful, grasping, and thriving men.[62]

They also had the reputation for being clannish, one aspect of which was the habit among Scottish businessmen, farmers and others for recruiting Scots in preference to other nationalities. C. and J. Smith followed this trend, but only up to a point: when advertising for a housemaid, a cook or farm servants, they noted 'Scotch preferred';[63] for sawmill operators, it was experience that counted.[64] Even then, Scottish candidates were probably favoured, such as the aforementioned John Hay Goodlet. When suitable fellow countrymen were not immediately on hand, Scots would often recruit relatives or acquaintances from their home district in Scotland – a practice that might account for so many Smith cousins travelling to Australia.

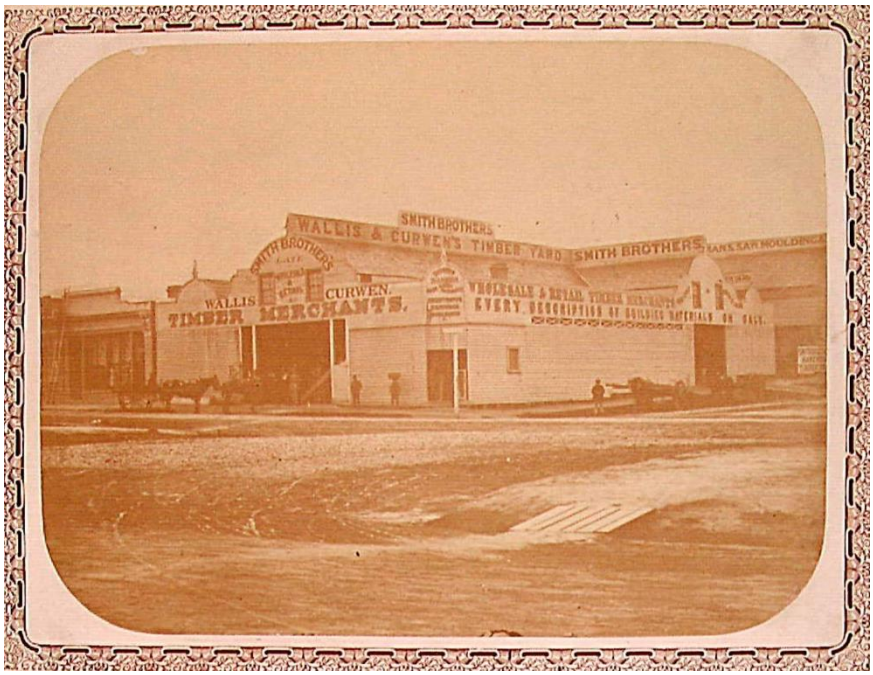


Figure 2. A photograph taken in 1861 of the premises of Smith Brothers on the corner of Sturt and Doveton streets, Ballarat.
(Courtesy of the State Library Victoria)

In August 1860, Adam and James bought out the retail division of an existing timber merchant in Ballarat, Wallis & Curwen.[65] By November that year, they were ready to open for business, as the following notice from a local newspaper announced:

> SMITH BROTHERS, TIMBER MERCHANTS, Sturt Street and Main Road, beg to announce to Builders, Contractors, Mining Companies, Farmers, and the Public in general, that they have purchased the lease of the premises, together with the entire stock of timber and building materials from Messrs Wallis & Curwen, and that it is their intention to continue the business in all its branches, and trust that they may receive a fair share of the liberal support bestowed on their predecessors.
>
> Having entered into an arrangement with Messrs Wallis & Curwen, for a constant supply of every description of hardwood from their mills at Bullarook, the trade and mining companies may confidently rely that any orders that they may be favored with, will be executed with promptitude and at the lowest current prices.

> Their connection with an old and well-known firm in the trade in Melbourne, affords them facilities for the purchase of every description of softwood and building materials, and will enable them to supply the same on the very best terms.[66]

The reference to their cousins' business in Melbourne is interesting. John of Leaderfoot later recalled that when his brothers 'embarked in business as timber merchants at Ballaarat they had only a very small capital, but Messrs C & J Smith their cousins became surety for them at the bank for a very considerable sum' (Letter III.2). The wording of the advert suggests that the arrangement between the cousins extended beyond the financial to include the supply of materials.

Smith Brothers of Ballarat soon caught the attention of both the local press and the public at large. In September 1861, curious citizens came to their yard to view the trees they had taken from Bullarook Forest,[67] an event that also merited a report in *The Star*.[68] Bullarook was being logged extensively at this time to meet the demand for timber from Victoria's various industries, not least the goldmines around Ballarat. The Smiths capitalised on this by supplying items essential to mining, such as the props and lining-boards used in the construction of tunnels. Just how much timber they were extracting from Bullarook can be gauged by the cartage costs they incurred, estimated at around £500 per month.[69] It is perhaps no surprise that Adam later supported a proposal for a new railway line between Bullarook and Ballarat.[70]

The good publicity continued for Smith Brothers in 1862, when *The Ballarat Star* announced,

> As evidence of the enterprise which characterises our Ballarat merchants, we may mention that Messrs Smith Brothers, of Sturt Street, recently erected a steam saw mill behind their yards in Doveton Street … These are the only mills of the kind in Ballarat West.[71]

The saws and machinery, which had been imported from Scotland, were heralded as being not only more efficient and easily operated than any others in the town, but also able to cut wood in a way that could previously only be done by Melbourne sawmills.

The population of Ballarat doubled between 1861 and 1871, sparking a great demand for new housing as well as other types of buildings, the majority of which were still being constructed from wood. Adam and James tapped into this market by following the example of their Melbourne cousins and stocking a wide range of material for the building trade, including floorboards, skirting, doors, sash windows, and architraves. Plaster and laths were sold 'at low prices'.[72] Smith Brothers also catered for other trades. They stocked the type of felloes required by wheelwrights as well as those used by agricultural engineers to build or repair threshing machines. Beech and hornbeam timber was kept with

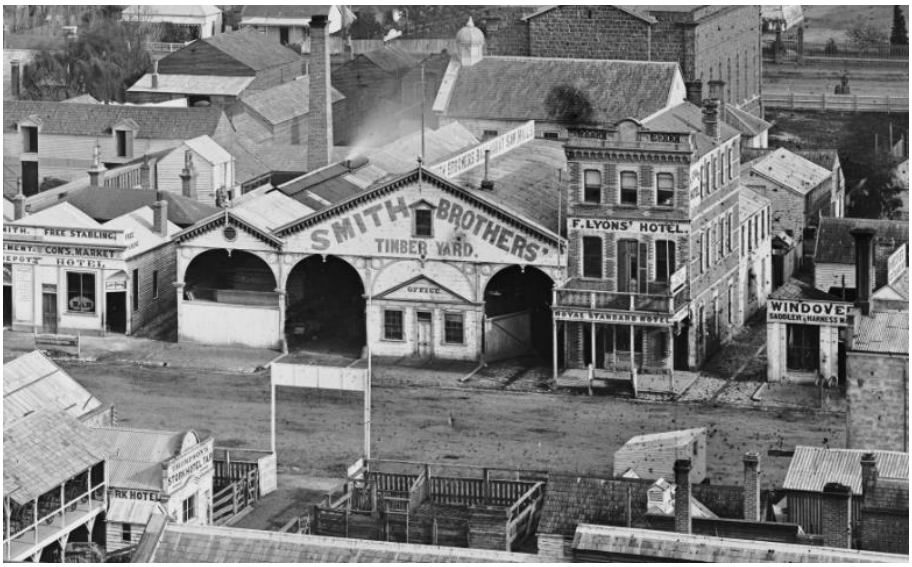


Figure 3. A detail from a photograph of Ballarat taken in 1870 showing Smith Brothers' sawmills and timber yard in Doveton Street. (Courtesy of the State Library of New South Wales)

millwrights in mind. They also won important government contracts during the 1860s, including one in 1861 worth £1,225 for the maintenance of the plank road that ran between Ballarat and Geelong.[73]

A sign of Adam and James' confidence during this period came in April 1865, when they decided to erect new premises in Doveton Street. The completed building was impressive enough to merit a report in *The Ballarat Star*, which is worth quoting in full, as it provides an excellent picture of their workplace and an idea of the firm's standing in the town:

> Messrs Smith Brothers, timber merchants, have just completed the erection of new and extensive premises in Doveton street, on the opposite side of Sturt street, to the site lately occupied by the firm. The new premises have a frontage of 100 feet, by a depth of 165 feet, and the outlay for land and buildings has been between £1100 and £1200. Varying the axiom of the currier in the fable,[74] Messrs Smith Bros. seem to hold that there's nothing like timber, and all the new erections are in that material. Ninety feet of the frontage is covered by the new building, the offices being in the centre and commanding all the operations in the yard, the front elevation being rather ornamental in design. At the present only half the depth is covered in a span of 50 feet connecting the lofts on either side, but it is intended to cover in the whole of the site eventually. On the south side of the shed there is an 18 horse-power engine, which

> drives a series of circular saws; and the firm is expecting out from America machinery for moulding, planeing, tonguing, and grooving. At the rear and along the north-side are timber sheds and stabling, the horses being bedded with sawdust, which is found to be an excellent substitute for straw, besides being much safer, as less liable to ignition. Mr Caselli was the architect, and Messrs Lloyd and Hunt the builders of the premises, Mr Bull being the engineer who superintended the erection of the boiler and machinery.[75]

The American machinery duly arrived and attracted further comment in *The Ballarat Star*.[76] The brothers continued to invest in new machinery, including a 'newly-invented saw sharpener, lately imported', the novelty of which was such as to deserve a lengthy description in *The Ballarat Courier*.[77] Recognition of Adam and James' progressive approach (and the quality of their work) came in 1866, when Smith Brothers was one of a small number of local firms invited to display their products at the District Exhibition held in Ballarat in 1866.[78]

The early success of their venture in Ballarat allowed Adam and James to construct comfortable houses for themselves, not far from their workplace. Adam's was built principally of brick and slate on a plot on Lyons Street measuring twenty-eight feet by 165 feet, and comprised a drawing room, dining room, hall, four bedrooms, kitchen, scullery, and servant's room. Both gas and water were laid on, and it was fitted with modern conveniences,[79] such as a 'Mrs Lang's' washing machine. It was also furnished to a high standard.[80]

Adam and James found themselves in an increasingly crowded market, however. By the end of the 1860s, there were thirteen timber merchants in Ballarat. Competition was also on the increase from firms in Melbourne and Geelong looking to extend their markets. Smith Brothers and the other Ballarat timber merchants, moreover, faced labour difficulties at this time, in particular from the Timber Trade Short Hours Association. At a meeting held on 9 December 1869, eleven of the thirteen timber merchants agreed to fixed opening times (7 a.m. to 5.30 p.m.) and the number of hours each type of employee would be expected to work. Sawyers and machine-men, for example, were to work eight hours a day or forty-eight hours a week while carters were to work nine hours a day or fifty-four hours a week.[81]

That Adam chaired the meeting at which this agreement was reached not only suggests that he was held in high regard by his fellow timber merchants but also reflects the role he played in the wider business and public life of Ballarat. At various times, he was a director of the Ballarat Gas Company, a director of the Junction Freehold Company, and a member of the board of shareholders for the Phoenix Foundry Company. He was also a member of the local Acclimatisation Society, one of many that sought to introduce non-native species to Australia, and a trustee of the Ballarat Cemetery, a position that was later taken up by his brother James.[82]

Adam and James' high standing in the community can also be judged by the fact that they were considered worthy of political office. Both men were approached to stand at the municipal election of 1871,[83] while James received 'several invitations to stand for member of Ballaarat' (Letter II.56) in the Victorian colonial election of 1877. Adam was not reticent in expressing his political views, which leant strongly towards republicanism. When commenting on the Franco-Prussian War of 1870-71, for example, he declared his sympathies were with republican France and said of Prussia, 'It is melancholy and at the same time amusing and instructive to see an educated people bowing down prone to such a thing as monarchy in the nineteenth century' (Letter II.3). He went on to announce, 'A free man in a free Democratic country like this feels himself a power in the state', and by that he meant Australia, as Britain was no doubt among those countries he condemned for having 'hereditary legislators'.

James also expressed his political opinions in his letters to John of Leaderfoot, although it is doubtful that his brother, described in his obituary as a 'staunch Conservative',[84] much liked what he read. Commenting on the 1874 United Kingdom general election, for example, James lamented the comparatively poor showing in Scotland of the Liberal Party while being cheered by the return of 'two real representatives of the "working classes"' in England (Letter II.23). As with Adam, he also favoured the republican French over the 'despotic' Prussians in the war of 1870-71. Neither Adam nor James, however, chose to follow in the footsteps of their cousin Thomas and actually stand for office, although James mused in 1877, 'Another time I may as it is a legitimate object for any man's ambition to represent one of the largest constituencies in the colony' (Letter II.56).

For many Scots, the most notable event of 1871 was not the end of the Franco-Prussian War but the centenary of Sir Walter Scott's birth; and as with many expatriate communities throughout the Empire, Ballarat Scots marked the event with a celebration. Adam was among those who attended the event at the Alfred Hall, and even received a special mention from one of the speakers:

> The Rev. J. W. Inglis, of St. John's Presbyterian Church, then addressed the audience. He regarded it right that he should be called on as he was born close to Abbotsford, and the classic scenes of the rippling, silvery Tweed. The mere mention of Scott and Abbotsford called back to him memories of the old land and the old times. Only one other face there he could recognise as coming from the classic border-land. He meant Mr Adam Smith, a citizen of no mean repute here. Ballarat also has the honor of having in it the son of the builder of Abbotsford.[85]

The music for the event was provided by the piper of the Caledonian Society of Ballarat, which had been founded in 1858 to promote fellowship among Scottish immigrants and those of Scottish descent and to encourage and

celebrate aspects of their national character. This included holding an annual 'Highland games', which comprised traditional sports, such as tossing the caber and throwing the hammer, as well as dancing and piping. The sound of the pipers playing 'Auld Lang Syne' on their return from the 1871 Ballarat games prompted nostalgic thoughts of home in James.[86]

Notions of Scottishness were also shaped by religion, which for the Smiths and the majority of emigrant Scots in Victoria meant Presbyterianism. While the Disruption of 1843 meant that it was not the unifying force it had been in Scotland,[87] the schism had officially been ended in Victoria when the main branches of Presbyterianism united in 1859 to form the Presbyterian Church of Victoria.[88] The Established and Free Churches in Melbourne had led the way some years earlier by uniting under the guidance of the Reverend Adam Cairns, whose often over-crowded Chalmers' Church William attended when there was room. This was the first such comprehensive union anywhere in the world, and one that would have been difficult to achieve back in Scotland. As William wryly observed to his mother, 'the people here are not considered bigotted [*sic*] as at home' (Letter I.2). As many of the ministers of the Presbyterian Church of Victoria came from Scotland, denominational differences between individual churches nevertheless persisted. In Melbourne, for example, the Scots' Church and Chalmers Church were popularly seen as representing the traditions of the Established Church and Free Church, respectively. Adam himself much preferred to 'hear the word from staunch Church of Scotland men' (Letter II.40), informing John of Leaderfoot that,

> One thing I am glad to come to Melbourne for and that is to hear a Church of Scotland minister as they are all Free Church and UPs up the country. I went on Sunday evening last to hear a Mr Menzies a churchman and did not I enjoy every word. (Letter II.15)

'Mr Menzies' was the Reverend Peter Menzies, co-minister of the Scots' Church in Melbourne. He was known not just for his skill as a preacher, but also for his espousal of a liberal form of Christianity, which in Adam's opinion 'gave his hearers more to think about than any other could out in this colony' (Letter II.22). Adam himself was clearly interested in contemporary theological debates, in particular how the Bible was to be interpreted in light of ongoing scientific discoveries. In this, he appears to have been influenced to an even greater extent by one of Menzies' successors, the Reverend Charles Strong, whose preaching showed Adam that Christianity and science 'do not need to be parted' (Letter II.93). John of Leaderfoot and his sisters in Darnick apparently held contrary theological views and did not always appreciate being lectured at by Adam in his letters home. On one occasion, 'a brothers advice about adhering to their first love' provoked a letter from his sisters 'which should only have been written to an infidel'. On another, John responded with an epistolary

'flagellation' that left Adam 'somewhat downcast' (Letter II.93). Although not for long, as listening to a sermon the following Sunday gave him the spirit to respond, at times in rather blunt terms. 'You seem to have turned your back on science and its discoveries altogether instead of being like the new men working side by side with it,' Adam accused his brother, before announcing that 'you can very easily see that your position is untenable' (Letter II.93).[89]

While in Ballarat, Adam had been the secretary of St Andrew's church, a post that was later filled by his brother. James' term as secretary ended acrimoniously, however, when he resigned in protest over the kirk session's handling of a dispute regarding the city's Scots College. Both of the Ballarat newspapers reported on his resignation, with *The Star* stating that the kirk authorities wanted James, 'a valuable officer to the church', to reconsider his decision.[90] As James' letter of 10 August 1874 shows, he did not (Letter II.32).

Given his theological interests and involvement in local church administration, it seems fitting that Adam's wife, Eliza Cameron, was a daughter of the manse.[91] They were married in Geelong on 15 January 1863 by the Reverend Thomas Mckenzie Fraser, the Inverness-born minister of the city's High Church. Born in Edderton, Ross-shire, Eliza further strengthened Adam's Scottish connections. Not all Scots were alike, however, and Adam attributed later marital disagreements to a regional difference in their characters: 'I have a little difficulty in managing my wife and her stern northern nature does not see things through the same medium that I see them,' he informed his brother in 1878 (Letter II.79).

James followed his brother's example by marrying a Scot. Grace Horsburgh was a native of Roxburghshire, where her father Alexander had farmed Hunthill, near Jedburgh. They wed on 14 February 1867 and the letters suggest that theirs was a contented marriage, with John of Leaderfoot noting that she was 'an excellent wife and made James very happy' (Letter II.63). Her kindness extended to Adam, whom she nursed for three weeks through a bout of rheumatism. Something soured between them, however, as Adam later wrote critically about her character in several letters to family in Scotland, and even claimed that she had 'had a deadly hatred at me since ever she came to Australia' (Letter II.79). So saying, James was not much taken by Adam's wife either, thinking her 'a most intensely selfish woman' (Letter II.8). Apparently, neither thought the other's wife could match the standards set by their own mother.

Adam and James faced family difficulties of a different kind in the form of James Turnbull, one of the sons of their maternal uncle William Turnbull of Falnash. He had also made his way out to Australia, but unlike his Smith cousins had not applied himself to anything in particular. Indeed, James Smith later recollected that during his cousin's ten years in Australia and New Zealand, 'he never did one honest day's work' (Letter II.27). At various times, he was joined in Australia by his brothers Gideon, Thomas and William, all of whom Adam and James considered to be loafers whose behaviour had brought disgrace upon

the good name that they had established for themselves in Ballarat. Matters got worse for Adam and James when William of Falnash died in 1870. In his will, he made them trustees of the £1,000 he had left to his son James. William's eldest son and main heir, Robert, was slow in sending them the money, apparently because he wanted to use some of it to pay his brother James' debts – James Turnbull by this time being back in Scotland. As the letters show, the matter caused Adam and James a good deal of work and no small amount of anxiety as they tried to decide which course to take. On one thing they agreed: on no account should James Turnbull return to Australia. 'I am sure it would be very foolish were he to think of it. The Colony is perfectly inundated with fellows of his stamp and they are a perfect nuisance to every body who has anything to do with them,' James told John of Leaderfoot (Letter II.4).[92] His relief in January 1871 that Gideon Turnbull's inheritance had lately arrived and 'from having been a daily and all day visitor at our yard we have never had a sight of him since' (Letter II.5) is palpable.

Later that year, English novelist Anthony Trollope visited Ballarat, and commented:

> It is certainly a most remarkable town. It struck me with more surprise than any other city in Australia. It is not only its youth, for Melbourne also is very young; nor is it the population of Ballarat which amazes, for it does not exceed a quarter of that of Melbourne; but that the town is so well built, so well ordered, endowed with the present advantages so great in the way of schools, hospitals, libraries, hotels, public gardens and the like should have sprung up so quickly with no internal advantages of its own other than that of gold.[93]

It was also clear to Trollope, however, that Ballarat's period of rapid growth had been checked partly by the decline in local goldmining and partly by the discovery of gold elsewhere in Victoria. A recession followed that hit vulnerable businesses such as Smith Brothers hard. Indeed, by 1872 Adam and James' financial situation had become so desperate that their Melbourne cousins stepped in. In what might be called a rescue package, John's estate and William covered their £3,000 debt with the bank and took on the £3,000 (plus interest) that they owed C. and J. Smith. Adam, moreover, was made a partner of C. and J. Smith, and subsequently left Ballarat to work in Melbourne, which saved Smith Brothers £400 a year for his expenses. James was left in sole charge of the Ballarat firm.

The brothers were extremely grateful for the help they had received, as Adam made clear in a letter sent home later that year: 'Our cousins have behaved very well and very kindly all through to us and in this matter they have been exceedingly so and given us such an opportunity as not many people get' (Letter II.15). He was also grateful for Violet's 'deed of generosity' in

excusing the £200 'which she had over my property' (Letter II.18). Adam's personal situation clearly did not improve, however, as in 1873 Violet lent him £250, a kindness he acknowledged in a letter to John that also hinted at his recent troubles:

> I can now get along and will very speedily pull up and out through the difficulties that were so very dense ahead of me. Australia is all very well when it goes with you but if it goes against any one and he has long to pull against the stream all that I have got to say is Heaven help him. I have had the wind in my face of late and just wanted what Violet and you have sent me to let me breathe again and get nicely through and take advantage of the position. I am now in to get fairly afloat again and make up my leeway … I hope a year will see me clear again. (Letter II.21)

By that time, Adam's wife Eliza had left Ballarat and returned to Europe partly to reduce his expenses and partly to have their four children educated.[94] The distance was poignant for Adam, who appears to have missed his eight-year-old son Charles in particular. 'Tell me what sort of a boy he is in your next letter,' he asked John of Leaderfoot in May 1878 (Letter II.82).[95] Reassurance came by the next mail:

> Your little Charlie is getting on first rate and is a very fine little chap. We all like him greatly and he seems to enjoy himself much his holidays are just at hand when he will go to his mother for a while. (Letter II.84)

The sorrow induced by the absence of his children would have been heightened when Adam heard that his mother had died on 15 June 1874. As well as taking out notices in *The Ballarat Star* and *The Ballarat Courier*, he and James sent letters to John of Leaderfoot expressing their grief in tender and nostalgic tones. Adam recalled her giving food to beggars – 'I have seen them if they came at dinner time standing supping broth from a bowl at the kitchen door' – and extolled her maternal qualities:

> The old Scottish gentlewoman with her brave heart and kind, and her ready hands may be an example in the family for a great many years yet and I am sure no child that she had will ever see any better one to take a pattern from so that she will speak though dead and her remembrance will ever be green in their memories. (Letter II.36)

James echoed these sentiments and suggested that John write an account of her life for the benefit of the family. Her death was also a reminder of their own mortality. 'We John stand now in life's outer circle all of our father and mother being gone before,' James observed (Letter II.35).

By the late 1870s Ballarat was once more experiencing economic growth, mainly due to the advent of new industries in the city, which in turn led to an increase in building, especially in Ballarat West. New hotels, offices, shops, and warehouses were erected, while old ones were rebuilt, bringing business and wealth to the town's building trades, including its timber merchants.[96] This upturn came too late for Smith Brothers, however, with James informing John of Leaderfoot in May 1877, 'Business is very dull in Ballarat and I do not see what is to make it better unless we have a return to prosperity in mining which is at a very low ebb' (Letter II.56). What James failed to mention was the dire state of his own finances, something which only became apparent after his sudden death later that year, aged forty-six. Adam wrote home with the doleful news:

> I went with Willie to the bank and found that James's account was overdrawn £2300. I have since gone over his books and papers and find that his estate may be deficient from £400 to £800 it depends on the turning out of the stock (Letter II.58).

Adam added that his sisters in Scotland might cover James' debts and so prevent the public shame of his estate being declared insolvent. 'O John get my sisters to settle up James' deficiency,' he pleaded to his brother (Letter II.58). Adam's own finances were in a desperate state as well, as he admitted in the same letter,

> I have given my last pound. I have no money coming from the Melbourne business which has not paid me a pound for four years and except £350 from my father's bequest to me and which I place at the service of the estate I have nothing more except a wife and four children.

After various family meetings in Scotland, the sisters agreed not only to clear James' personal debts, but also to help address the debts of Smith Brothers, which was bankrupt 'for a very large amount' (Letter III.2). Jane relinquished the £1,100 owed to her by Adam and Smith Brothers while Violet offered to pay James' deficiency at the bank and to clear the other debts, including the £1,000 that the firm owed Robert Smith. This generosity was expected to cost Violet at least £1,400.[97]

Back in Melbourne, the firm of C. and J. Smith was once more dissolved and reformed, this time to remove Adam from the partnership and so protect the firm from being held accountable for the debts of Smith Brothers. Feeling that 'the almighty had deserted me altogether' (Letter II.75), Adam wandered down to the banks of the Yarra with thoughts of suicide running in his mind. His 'doggedness', however, enabled him to overcome the promptings of the 'evil spirits' and he 'steadfastly pursued my way back again'.

The firm of Smith Brothers proved less resilient. A notice appeared in *The Ballarat Courier* of 14 January 1878 advertising its sale:

> Freehold Property in Doveton Street South, so Long and Favorably Known as SMITH BROTHERS' TIMBER YARD, Together with the Whole of the EXCELLENT MACHINERY, well-selected and varied stock-in-trade, builders' materials, horses, buggies, wagon, drays, harness, iron safe, office furniture, and numerous effects.[98]

The yard was bought by Stephens & Wardle for £1,530. Adam placed a notice in *The Ballarat Star* the following month to 'respectfully solicit on their behalf a continuance of that liberal support so long enjoyed by us'.[99] The sale of the brothers' other property in the city followed, including Adam's 'commodious dwelling house' in Lyons Street and a large allotment with cottage in Dana Street.[100]

Amidst all these financial cares, Adam had to deal with the death of his brother. 'I cannot tell you how acutely I feel James's loss. We have been so many years together and each was the only man in the colony to whom the other could speak confidentially,' he lamented to John of Leaderfoot (Letter II.60). That he had been unable to get to Ballarat in time after receiving a telegram saying his brother was dying and wanted to see him could only have made the pain worse. James' death was reported in *The Ballarat Courier*,

> Yesterday morning, when his death was made known a general feeling of regret was expressed throughout the community, for he was a gentleman highly esteemed by a wide circle of friends, and respected by all classes …. Although not a public man, yet he at all times took a deep interest in matters that concerned the welfare of the city and town.[101]

He was also remembered in *The Ballarat Star* as a 'kind master, a good citizen, and an active member of the Presbyterian Church'.[102] The high regard in which he was held by the people of Ballarat was reflected in the turn out for his funeral, as reported in *The Ballarat Courier*:

> The funeral of the late Mr James Smith took place yesterday, and was very largely attended. The procession started from deceased's residence in Lyons street, shortly after four o'clock, and comprised about sixty vehicles, while thirty or forty workmen of the Phoenix Foundry Company, of which Mr Smith was a director, preceded the hearse.[103]

Attempts to address the financial mess that followed James' death were made more difficult by the behaviour of his widow Grace, who laid claim to his life insurance money despite it being signed over as security on his loans.

For Adam, it simply confirmed his earlier views of her. It also led to a 'declaration of war' between her and William (Letter II.61), who was much vexed by her 'peculiar conduct' (Letter II.65). That Thomas advised her only appears to have widened the gulf that already existed between him and William. Grace eventually set sail for Scotland, followed by vitriol in letters sent by Adam to John of Leaderfoot. 'She has a vast depth of cunning no end of malice some cleverness and a coat of varnish over them all,' he declared in November 1878.

The last extant letter from Adam was written on 27 December 1879, when he was still in Ballarat winding up the affairs of Smith Brothers. In 1881, he visited his wife and children in France before travelling on to Darnick with his son Charles. The climate in Scotland does not appear to have agreed with his weakened constitution, and after spending the whole of the winter in bed with rheumatism, he decided to return to Australia in the company of his daughter Ula and Charles. What happened next to Adam is revealed in the letter sent by John of Leaderfoot in 1891 to Charles, who by this time was twenty-one years old and working at the Colonial Bank of Australia (Letter III.2). No longer a partner in C. and J. Smith, Adam acted as a traveller for the firm until it was wound up in 1880. With the help of cousin William and financed by sister Violet, he then took up farming but 'made nothing of it'. Thereafter, he survived through the continued assistance of these two relatives, 'who suffered him to lack nothing that could contribute to his comfort'. John also made sure that Charles appreciated the full extent of Violet's generosity to the whole family: 'Your Father, his wife and family have been supported and the children educated by your Aunt Violet who was solely actuated by the desire that her brother's children should have a fair start in the world'. It would appear that Charles did not know this nor the extent of his father's distress.

Adam died at his home in Albert Street, Windsor, Melbourne, on 10 September 1888. He was buried two days later in the city's St Kilda Cemetery.

Conclusion

Violet Smith was the last of the emigrant Smith cousins to die. She had spent the early years of her widowhood in Darnick, before moving to a house in the Churchhill district of Edinburgh. She died there on 11 November 1921, aged eighty-nine years. Her death did not bring the connection that the Smith family had with Australia to an end. Adam and his cousins James, Robert, Thomas and William all had children who continued to live there. Some of them had families of their own, and some of their descendants are among the 2.1 million present-day Australians who claim Scottish ancestry.[104] As the letters show, theirs is an old story, one that begins over 170 years ago when Charles and John Smith set off on board the *Argyle* bound for a new life in Australia.

Kenneth Veitch
and Keith Smith

NOTES

[1] The authors are grateful to Lorne Smith and Michael Smith AM for reading and commenting on earlier drafts of this introduction.

[2] A brief account of John Smith senior's working life and the sources for it can be found in Ruddock, T. 'Smith, John (1782-1864)', *A Biographical Dictionary of Civil Engineers in Great Britain and Ireland, volume 1: 1500-1830*, London, 2002. See also the entry for John and Thomas Smith in the database *Dictionary of Scottish Architects (1660-1980)*.

[3] Three of them died in infancy. They are not shown on the Family Tree due to a lack of space.

[4] John Smith senior's diary is now lost. The quotations are taken from excerpts compiled by his granddaughter Jean Lee. A copy of Miss Lee's typescript is kept by the National Library of Scotland, MSS.8499-8499A. 'Excerpts from the diary of John Smith, sculptor and builder in Darnick, near Melrose, Roxburghshire'.

[5] *The Liverpool Albion*, 22 April 1850.

[6] 'Excerpts from the diary of John Smith, sculptor and builder in Darnick, near Melrose, Roxburghshire'.

[7] Hone, A. 'Thomas Chirnside (1815-1887)', *Australian Dictionary of Biography, volume 3: 1851-1890*, Melbourne, 1969.

[8] 'Garryowen'. *The Chronicles of Early Melbourne, 1835-1852*, 2 vols, 1888, II, 913.

[9] 'Garryowen', 1888, I, 441.

[10] 'Garryowen', 1888, II, 807.

[11] Among them was John Mackay from Haddington, who sailed from Liverpool to Port Phillip in 1852. A transcript of his onboard diary was published as volume 32 of the *Sources in Local History* series: *A Diary of a Journey from Haddington to Port Phillip kept by John Mackay, 1852*, trans. J Mitchell, Edinburgh, 2024.

[12] 'Excerpts from the diary of John Smith, sculptor and builder in Darnick, near Melrose, Roxburghshire'.

[13] *The Argus*, 12 November 1851.

[14] 'Excerpts from the diary of John Smith, sculptor and builder in Darnick, near Melrose, Roxburghshire'.

[15] *The Argus*, 20 September 1855.

[16] *The Argus*, 7 January 1854.

[17] *The Argus*, 28 March 1854.

[18] The rim or a section of the rim of a wooden wheel into which the outer end of the spokes are fitted.

[19] *The Argus*, 4 January 1854.

[20] *The Argus*, 6 March 1855.

[21] *The Argus*, 1 February 1860.

[22] For example, *The Argus*, 25 January 1855.

[23] The Australian colonies used pound Sterling during the period covered by the letters. Readers who wish to gain an idea of the current value of the historical monetary amounts quoted in the Introduction should consult the *Measuring Worth* website.

[24] *The Argus*, 1 February 1860.

[25] *The Argus*, 8 September 1854.

[26] The local newspaper, *The Bacchus Marsh Express*, noted on 14 January 1871 that Thomas was 'well respected [in the Melton district], and on leaving was presented by the inhabitants with a gold watch'.

[27] *The Herald*, 6 September 1887.

[28] *The Bacchus Marsh Express*, 14 April 1877.

[29] Cited in '502 Albert Street East Melbourne', *Victorian Heritage Database Report*, 10 November 2020.

[30] Digby, E, ed. *Australian Men of Mark*, 2 vols, Sydney, 1889, I, 344.

[31] See, for example, the advert in *The Sydney Mail and New South Wales Advertiser*, 28 February 1880.

[32] Digby, 1889, I, 345.

[33] The property was described at length in a notice printed in *The Sydney Mail and New South Wales Advertiser*, 19 October 1878. James had also bought land in the Blue Mountains, *c.*95 km west of Sydney, on which his son built Yester Grange.

[34] William Weatherly, whose letter to John of Leaderfoot and Mary Ann Smith is included in the present collection (Letter II.2), also returned to Scotland for a wife. He married Jean Wilson in Earlston, Berwickshire, in December 1878.

[35] Helen's life was sufficiently interesting to prompt a biography: Sandilands, J. *Helen Macpherson Smith: Her Life and Lasting Legacy, 17 April 1874 – 19 April 1951*, Melbourne, 2011.

[36] John had only been in Victoria for eleven years before retiring to Darnick aged thirty-six years, an indication of how quickly fortunes could be made in the colonies.

[37] Wood, J. *A Great Boon to the People of Darnick: a History of the Smith Memorial Hall Darnick*, Darnick, 2018, 9.

[38] Very little is known about George's life in Australia.

[39] Wood, 2018, 11. John also left bequests to his brother-in-law John Smith of Leaderfoot, and his brothers Andrew Smith of Castlemaine (East Lothian) and William Smith of Melbourne.

[40] Quoted in Wood, 2018, 11.

[41] For a history of which, see Wood, 2018.

[42] *The Herald*, 25 August 1870.

[43] *The Argus*, 17 June 1880.

[44] Digby, I, preface. James' entry is on pages 343-345.

[45] *The Argus*, 23 January 1885.

[46] *The Herald*, 6 September 1887.

[47] *The Herald*, 26 January 1900. An obituary in *The Australasian*, 3 February 1900, reveals that William had trained for five years as a solicitor's clerk.

[48] See Sandilands, 2011, 109. The balance of William's estate when he died was £4,000.

[49] Helen toured Europe before dying in the Hotel Majestic in Cannes, France. Curiously, she was buried in a pauper's grave in Cannes, though later exhumed. She left her estate of £250,000 largely to form a philanthropic foundation for the benefit of the state of Victoria. By 2024, it had granted £74 million to Victorian charities. See Sandilands, 2011.

[50] See Sandilands, 2011, 110, for details of Robert's estate.

[51] To distinguish him from other John Smiths in the district, he was often known by the name of his current farm. Even his brother Adam addressed him as 'Leaderfoot' in one of the letters (Letter II.3), and this form has been adopted in the present edition.

[52] *The Southern Reporter*, 9 November 1865.

[53] *The Southern Reporter*, 7 October 1869.

[54] The match held at Thornielaw in December 1862, for example, attracted forty competitors. See the report in *The Southern Reporter*, 1 January 1863.

[55] *The Southern Reporter*, 31 December 1868. An 'A. Smith' was in first place. The report omitted the farm to which he was attached, so his identity is difficult to ascertain.

[56] *The Southern Reporter*, 11 December 1873.

[57] One of their Border Leicester gimmers, for example, won second prize at the Highland and Agricultural Society of Scotland Show held in Stirling in July 1900 and first prize later that year at the Border Union Agricultural Society Show held in Kelso. See *The Southern Reporter*, 9 August 1900. James R. Smith, 'a stockman of acknowledged skill and enterprise' had purchased the famous Mellendean flock of Border Leicesters in 1895. See *The Southern Reporter*, 24 October 1895.

[58] Smith, Charles L. 'My Early Youth', typescript, reproduced in the Appendix.

[59] *The Kelso Mail*, 17 August 1910.

[60] Letter II.52

[61] A letter dated 1858 copied into the letter book of J. & T. Smith (private collection) shows that Adam had worked for the family firm, at least for a short time, before emigrating.

[62] Howitt, W. *Land, Labour and Gold; or, Two Years in Victoria*, London, 1858, 159.

[63] *The Star*, 31 January 1856, 22 February 1856, and 11 August 1856.

[64] *The Star*, 21 May 1856.

[65] *The Star*, 6 August 1862. A much later report in *The Ballarat Courier* (25 September 1877) stated that they had bought the timber yard belonging to Robert McNiece in 1859 and moved to Ballarat soon after.

[66] *The Star*, 16 November 1860.

[67] Bullarook is *c.*15 km east of Ballarat.

[68] *The Star*, 19 September 1861.

[69] *The Ballarat Star*, 10 October 1866. This amount did not include the costs of carting props and other pre-cut items from the forest.

[70] *The Ballarat Star*, 16 October 1866. Not all modernisation appealed to Adam. The arrival of the submarine telegraph wire prompted the following response: 'Individually it may be a great convenience but to commercial folks but I would about as soon be without it' (Letter II.17).

[71] *The Ballarat Star*, 23 August 1862.

[72] *The Ballarat Star*, 4 April 1865.

[73] *The Government Gazette*, 22 November 1861.

[74] In Aesop's fable 'The Huntsman and the Currier', the currier climbs a tree to better watch the huntsman kill the bear. The moral of this fable arguably turned out to be more apt for the firm: 'Let no man undertake what is out of his power, for there is no depending upon uncertainties, or on what tomorrow might bring'.

[75] *The Ballarat Star*, 11 August 1865.

[76] *The Ballarat Star*, 27 May 1867.

[77] *The Ballarat Courier*, 7 February 1870.

[78] *The Ballarat Star*, 26 September 1866. This was one of a number of local displays preliminary to the Intercolonial Exhibition of Australasia held in Melbourne.

[79] *The Ballarat Courier*, 11 March 1878.

[80] *The Ballarat Courier*, 21 January 1873.

[81] *The Ballarat Star*, 21 December 1869.

[82] *The Ballarat Star*, 3 February 1873.

[83] *The Ballarat Star*, 22 July 1871.

[84] *The Southern Reporter*, 18 August 1910.

[85] *The Ballarat Star*, 16 August 1871.

[86] The birth of Robert Burns was also celebrated in Ballarat, usually by a dinner held at the Edinburgh Castle Hotel, although there is no mention in the surviving letters of either Adam or James attending it. In 1887, a statue to Burns was unveiled in Ballarat, the first in Australia to honour a poet. It was paid for by subscription.

[87] The Disruption of 1843 was a schism in the Church of Scotland in which over a third of its ministers broke away to form the Free Church of Scotland. It followed a long period of dispute within the Church, mainly regarding the right of patronage.

[88] Adam referred to the annual General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church of Victoria as a 'corroboree', an Aboriginal word for a ceremonial meeting. Its use is the only instance in the surviving Smith correspondence (other than adapted place names such as Ballarat and Geelong) when the Aboriginal presence in Victoria is even implied.

[89] James was similarly ready to engage in long-range theological disputes with his Darnick relations, as shown in Letter II.23.

[90] *The Ballarat Star*, 27 July 1874. *The Ballarat Courier*, 25 July 1874, erroneously stated that the committee had asked James for his resignation. It printed a correction two days later.

[91] John Cameron had been the Church of Scotland minister for Stornoway, Lewis, and then for Edderton, Ross-shire. He had died in 1854.

[92] Whatever his past behaviour, James Turnbull left a positive mark on Australia by bequeathing £200 to the hospital that had attended to his dying brother Gideon in 1881 (which turned out to be Geelong Hospital). His Victorian estate, consisting of bank and gas shares, was worth £3,238 when he died in 1888. See *The Ballarat Star*, 7 December 1888.

[93] Trollope, A. *Australia and New Zealand, volume 2: Victoria and Tasmania*, London, 1875, 46.

[94] After their departure, Adam put his house in Lyon Street up for let and auctioned off its contents.

[95] Charles' own account of his early life can be read in the Appendix.

[96] Bate, W. *Lucky City. The First Generation at Ballarat, 1851-1901*, Melbourne, 1978.

[97] When Violet died in 1921, she left an estate of £19,000, so she had clearly not exhausted her wealth in exercising her generosity.

[98] *The Ballarat Courier*, 14 January 1878.

[99] *The Ballarat Star*, 12 February 1878.

[100] *The Ballarat Courier*, 26 February 1878.

[101] *The Ballarat Courier*, 25 September 1877.

[102] *The Ballarat Star*, 25 September 1877.

[103] *The Ballarat Courier*, 26 September 1877.

[104] Australian Bureau of Statistics, Census 2021.

THE LETTERS OF THE SMITH FAMILY, EMIGRANTS TO AUSTRALIA 1854-1891

PART ONE
1854-1859

1. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO ALISON SMITH

Collingwood Saw Mills,
Melbourne
8 September 1854

My Dear Mother,

As we have now arrived at the end of our long journey in safety and good health after a first rate passage, I must give you a short account of it from the time we parted with Father and Jeany at Liverpool: although Millers and Thomson's[1] behaviour was to us anything but gentlemanly they at any rate, chartered a first rate vessel and provisioned it well, so that after getting our berth secured which, after all, turned out to be by far the best in the cabin, we were pretty snug.

The first three or four days we sailed so smoothly along that there was little or no sickness and with our fine large steady sailing ship, and a good start, we gradually got used to the motion, got our sea legs, and thus escaped the sea sickness altogether, and indeed fully two-thirds of the passengers never were at all squeamish and as for myself I never missed a meal on board neither the hot, cold, or stormy weather making any difference on me at all.

As we found our English friends by far the best cooks and fondest of it, our friend Mr Thompson, the stout old farmer that Jeany saw, was appointed permanent caterer and took his seat at the head of the table and looked after our provisioning, and as we were liberally provisioned and all of good quality, he managed to give us a very well supplied table with a plum duff at dinner every day, as second course, and as Thomson [*sic*] remarked to keep the wind out of our stomacks. The pork being first rate we always had it at breakfast which saved our eggs considerably, and we landed with the full half of them and almost the whole of the preserves of Chas and John's in very good order. Our steward's apt. being a baker, baked us very good flour bread (which was always a treat) once or twice a week, so you see in the way of provisions we have not been neglected. The water was not so bad as I supposed, neither was the allowance so stinted, being quite enough for ordinary purposes, and it tasted not so bad with a little vinegar in it to kill the live stock which we saw quite well with naked eyes, but the vinegar soon settled them and was a great improvement to the water. One soon gets accustomed to drink that kind of water.

The passengers in our cabin were of course very miscellaneous and certainly some of them not very agreeable, the ladies and there were four of

---

1 Millers and Thompson was a shipping company based in Liverpool. William and Thomas Smith sailed on the *Morning Star*, which was scheduled to depart Liverpool on 30 May and arrived at Port Phillip on 21 August.

them, being very useless and rather troublesome, never putting hand to a single thing, and yet two of them are to join their husbands, one to her intended and the other to hers. Amongst such a number of passengers 320 we had numbers of very good companions, but certainly an emigrant ship is just the place to meet with strange people and we had them, as they were of all professions and from all countries, Germans, Swiss, Italians, French, English, Scotch and Irish, the low English and Irish with the exceptions of the Jews being generally the worst behaved, and the foreigners the best. There were about 40 Scotchmen on board, principally from the north and west, the doctor also being Scotch and a very fine fellow.

We found the privilege of being allowed the liberty of the poop, which was reserved for saloon and poop passengers only, in itself worth the additional money, as in the hot weather it was always the coolest, being high and exposed to the breeze, although protected from the sun, by an awning and in the cold rougher weather, again, it was better, as it was seldom wet. Whereas the main deck was always wet and slippery, making it quite an adventure to cross it without a tumble; another poop privilege was getting a cold bath in the hot weather every other morning either in a water tank or which was oftener the case, by standing under the hose which was in play for the purpose, and this was no small privilege, when two-thirds of the intermediate passengers did not go to bed at night, for heat, but slept on the open deck. It was then when we all got a little reduced in bulk, more or less, and when Tom had a sort of bilious attack, eating nothing for a day or two, although only confined to bed one day, he was a good deal reduced and rather shaky about the legs, however, he just mended as quickly and in a very short time was as stout and healthy as ever.

Our time was not spent so very monotonously as you would suppose, as in numbers we were quite a village full, and there was always something going on. In the summer evenings there was a great deal of dancing, singing and various kinds of instrumental music, and the long winter evenings were passed very pleasantly in our cabin, as it was a place of resort for the ships officers who gave us their long yarns, and some of the saloon people, the society with us being more congenial to their taste than amongst the aristocrats, where they were all at sixes and sevens: from the saloon to the steerage there was a good deal of pretty heavy gambling, some especially in the saloon some doing nothing else for days at a time, but in anything of that kind of course we did not join.

On the 14th day of June we sailed close alongside of Madeira which was the last land we saw and on the 28th day out we crossed the line, where about a score of the sailors went through the shaving operation very good naturedly for such rough treatment.[2] Up to this time we saw numbers of vessels sailing

---

2 It was a maritime tradition for sailors crossing the Equator for the first time to undergo an initiation ceremony, which often included being given a botched shave and haircut.

in every direction but home, and sometimes as many as ten at a time were within sight but no homeward bound ones for letters, and on the 10th July we spoke an American which had been boarded by privateers, and this was the last vessel we saw until we entered the heads; from the line however until our arrival we had a great number of birds following the ship and flying about the rigging very close to a person, we caught some of them with the fishing line and hook baited with pork, and one of the albatross we caught measured 10ft from the tip to the tip of his wings. On the 28th July we rounded the Cape of Good Hope very quietly in a pretty calm sea, but when south of St Pauls and Amsterdam[3] we had it rough enough sailing before the wind only one sail set, all the others being furled, that was the weather to try our stomacks, as the motion was so great that for several days we always were obliged to stand at our meals; at this time too our crockery disappeared very fast. On the 74th day out by nautical time we came in sight of the light house off Cape Ottway[4] in a direct line before us, thus proving our captain to be a first[-rate] navigator as he was a very fine fellow. We beat about all night and in the morning got the pilot on board when as it was a splendid day with a fine breeze, the sail in the Bay, which is 50 miles long, was really magnificent as we passed ships from all countries and of all descriptions and amongst others the Great Britain,[5] which was ordered to lie in quarantine for 21 days with smallpox on board, we gave her 3 cheers in passing. We cast anchor on Monday morning having made the passage in 75 nautical days, and a good passage we made considering that she was 19 feet in water. Charles came on board next morning but did not at first recognize us, although we knew him at once, as there is almost no change on him at all, but looking very healthy.

We got on shore in the afternoon by sailing up the Yarra Yarra, the whole of us enjoying the scenery and everything else amazingly, although it is nothing extraordinary, so glad were we after our long captivity to set foot once more on terra firma. We arrived at Chas and John's place on the top of Eastern Hill in good time for tea and there met John in colonial costume high outside top boots and broad brimmed straw hat looking very much as at home, fresh coloured and looking well although not very fat. He is quite a go-ahead pushing man of business now and Charles and he do a first rate trade paying about £50 a week to draymen alone for bringing goods from the wharf.

Their house is a wooden one standing in the middle of one of the yards and is two storey height, three rooms about the size of the old parlour at Darnick above with a kitchen room and office below, they were just preparing the room below for Tom and I and it is not quite finished yet as they did not

---

3 The islands of St Paul and Amsterdam lie in the southern Indian Ocean.

4 Cape Otway, southern Victoria. The lighthouse had been in operation since 1848.

5 Isambard Kingdom Brunel's famous steamship *Great Britain* had been employed on the Britain to Australia route since 1852.

expect the Morning Star so soon. Their housekeeper is Highland but a first rate cook and Chas and John have a well filled house with good tidy furniture etc. As cabbages are very dear here Mrs Rose never makes broth, but we have always a roast of beef or mutton in place of them, which does quite well for all of us. We found on arrival that Chas and John had quite enough to do for us both, Tom as engineman at the Saw Mills and I, to assist Goodlet and John in the yard selling timber doors, windows, and in fact everything connected with the building trade. During the last week I have been doing this and am now pretty well up at the prices of the articles and bargaining with Irishmen who try one's temper a little, but as there is always plenty to do the yard never being empty, the time passes very pleasantly. I expect to go down to the wharf next week with Charles to assist him with measurements etc. and employ draymen to cart up the timber etc. taking notes of everything. This will be my principal employment just now. I receive £4 a week as Chas said "to begin with" so we are all pretty comfortably settled here. Chas and John's store for goods as windows, doors, etc. is two storeys high and about 50 ft square and a very well filled one, it is just now, as also is their new timber yard in which is the saw mills as they have been buying in heavily, prices being low at present.

Our first week in the colony we wandered about the town and Bush different excursions every day, seeing all that was to be seen, and really it is a splendid country, the Bush in particular, being like a gentleman's policy, but more natural, with fine large spreading evergreen trees, here and there, and in clumps, and the ground below level and smooth. We wandered about wherever we had a mind, no fences here to disturb one, and nobody to prosecute you for trespass. We see great numbers of Diggers[6] setting off, some on horseback in picturesque dresses, galloping along through the Bush, others in bands and bullocks drays; there are generally 8 bullocks in a dray and they go very quietly and steadily along. Mr Walter Bell from Camptown near Jedburgh, is our next door neighbour and frequent visitor, he has been a very successful builder and although a short while ago he paid about £300 a week in wages he is idle just now as trade is slack, however he need not care as he has a house beside the timber yard rented £700 per annum which is pretty fair. I called on Henry Shillinglaw last week, he is very brisk at the high wages etc. and likes the colony well, although the mistress is not so contented but I believe she lost her child on the way or since her arrival.

Although things here are now called cheap, I dare hardly price, much less buy a single article, as small apples sell at 2d each, oranges 4d each, milk 2/- the bottle, and other things quite as high as we found when bargaining with the washerman for 8/- a dozen for our ship's dirty clothes and that for small things such as cotton handkerchiefs. However everything not worth 8d we were obliged to throw away to save money. At the end of the voyage, viz. the

---

6 An Australian term for miners, in this instance heading for the goldfields.

20th June[7] we found that fully one-half of our shirts had never been used and almost everything else was clean, a shirt always wearing about 10 days or a fortnight. The Mr Brodies are looking about them yet and are doing nothing and so are most of our shipmates, a good many being off to the diggings which are reported to be very fair just now and near at hand, however, we never trouble ourselves about them as we don't intend going. Mr Robinson's parcel is not delivered yet as I have not seen him, neither is Tom Fairbairn's, the other letters are posted.

The town of Melbourne has a strange half foreign go-a-head appearance with a great many beautiful verandah [*sic*] houses and cottages and one would think that every house had a different architect so varied and different are they, some of wood, many of brick, and some of stone but none of them have the substantial appearance of houses at home. The very wide streets give it a straggling appearance and it has not the crowded smoky appearance of other large towns but looks as clear as in the country and is very airy especially about Collingwood or the top of Eastern Hill where we are, commanding a fine view of the Bay and shipping and the whole town lying below. The weather just now is very pleasant, not at all warm, cold in the morning and at nights and the atmosphere clear and dry, with scarcely a cloud to be seen and I only wish it may always remain so, at any rate.

We have news today from England by the overland mail 57 days old only and see by it that Captain Bilton's ship sailed a fortnight after us but he has not yet arrived, however we will send our logs, tame affairs as they are, exactly as they were written on the spur of the moment, although I fear there will be little to interest you in them. I posted newspapers by the Ocean Chief,[8] but will send this by the Croesus as she is the first regular mail since our arrival,[9] the Lightning just leaving the day before we arrived,[10] or you might have had quick news from us.

7th September

By waiting a little we have received Jeany and Father's letter for the 3rd of July and I am glad to see that all goes on so the rest in their usual. I have neither seen or heard of James Turnbull here. Jeany by her letter, thinks the books

---

7 A mistake for August.

8 The *Ocean Chief*, a clipper belonging to the Black Ball Line, had sailed for Liverpool on 5 September 1854. It operated a mail service as well as carrying passengers and cargo.

9 By this time, a regular Royal Mail service had been established between Britain and Australia. The times of arrival and departure of the mail packets were advertised in local newspapers. The steamship *Croesus* belonged to the General Screw Steam Shipping Company, which had been awarded the contract in 1853.

10 The *Lightning*, a clipper belonging to the Black Ball Line, had left Melbourne for Liverpool on 20 August.

would be a great source of amusement and instruction on ship board, this is quite a mistake, as it is the last place to read on with the constant noise etc. so we did little at that, games generally wiling the time away rather better.

You would be astonished to see the different people about Melbourne with their free and easy manner and general equality one with another, the working class here being generally very wealthy and mostly all of them with gold chains and rings about them even men selling oranges etc. at the corner of the streets must have gold chains although their shoes may be almost worn from their feet, and shabby otherwise. I have only seen one beggar since my arrival here and he had the impertinence to ask me for 1/- or 2/6 expecting it as a matter of course. There are a great many Germans here, very respectable and quiet, and swarms of Chinese, very useless and insignificant, indeed there is a move made to keep them out of the colony although they are thought little of here. The Irish are very strong here and rum customers they are, as we know when they come to the timber yard and a great many do come, trying to get an article very cheap entirely. We have always plenty customers about the yard and I like the selling very well now as I begin to know all the prices and where things are and the different kinds of timber. There is about 3,000 doors and windows in the store just now selling very fast as we have the best assortment in town considered, you may see them in the papers as C & J advertise strongly as they find it pays best to be before the public. Tell Mr Aitchison that I would like very well to hear from him occasionally and also from Tom Shiel who, by the bye must be turning quite a "lady's man" with the Misses Ballantyne in the country visiting him. Charles Mill will have got all settled by this time at Gilmerscleugh[11] and I sincerely hope that it will turn out well for him. Farming here is always said to be in a very short time a most profitable business, as land is cheap labour coming down and provisions high and there can be little doubt that the land is extremely fertile.

With kind remembrances to father and you, brothers and sisters and all inquiring friends,

I am, Dear Mother,
Your affectionate son,
William Smith

I hope you will be able to make this letter out and have not crossed it for that purpose. W.S.

P.S.
We have not drawn our money yet as we don't need it, but must keep our eyes open as there is something to be done with a little here, however we will be

[11] The name of the farm that Charles Mill's father had leased for him was better known as Gilmanscleugh. It was located in the parish of Kirkhope, Selkirkshire.

pretty cautious as there is no hurry. We found the Mr Brodies very agreeable quiet men and I like them very well, James is still collecting information and is going, I believe, to start something immediately. John, I think, will either go up the country or to the Diggings. I have not yet seen any person from about Roxburghshire that I know except H. Shillinglaw. If Hoggarth gets safe out, he will do well here if he can get a horse and dray which, however, costs from £150 to £200. They get 10/- a load for driving about 1 mile from the wharf. The newspapers came to hand today.

Some of the Melbourne people got a fright last night as there was a great number of cannons fired by the Great Britain on her delivery from quarantine, which by the timid was mistaken for the Russians.[12] The soldiers were all under arms at first, until it was ascertained. I see by the newspaper that the Melrose drainage is a failure, it is a great pity after the amount of money spent. I saw Mr Learmonth (Frank Burnet's friend) tonight, he was inquiring after Frank and seems to be in good spirits, and while speaking to him another man, who had wrought at Longformacus,[13] came into the yard and hearing Frank's name mentioned, knew him too. I don't know the man.

Tom and I have posted a good many newspapers, both for home and to friends and acquaintances. But I must leave Tom something to say.

Charles bids me say to Father that the Bulgersteine from London has arrived with the iron.

2. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO ALISON SMITH

Melbourne
27 October 1854

My Dear Mother,

We received Father and Jeanie's letters by the Calcutta[14] and were glad to see that all progresses favourably at Darnick, and that you were enjoying your trip to Gilmerscleugh. We were glad to hear that Jane Blaikie, or Mrs Aris as she will now be, has made such a good match of it, and set another good example to the cousinhood.

Things here have been getting into rather a deranged state this while, in consequence of the dullness of trade, principally caused by glutted markets and

---

12 The Crimean War (1853-1856) had heightened existing fears about Russian interest in the Pacific in general and Australia in particular.

13 A village and parish in Berwickshire.

14 The *Calcutta* was a steamship operated by the General Screw Steam Shipping Company.

workmen refusing to come down a trifle in their extravagant demands, thereby stopping the progress of many a work that would otherwise go on at reasonable wages, which are called here 20/- or 25/- a day.

The timber trade still goes on flourishingly enough at a good profit too in proof of which Chas and John have just erected a new office in the front corner of the store as the last one was too small, being merely the verandah of the house enclosed.

By the bye, I could not find out Tom Fairbairn until the other day by accident I met him on the street and gave him his letter. He is in the employment of a coachbuilder cleaning carriages just now and has been for a good while. He is in no great spirits, complains of never hearing from home and I am afraid he is not doing so good.

Henry Shillinglaw is getting a partial employment at good wages and when I last saw him was looking brisk, and had just taken a large house (at £3 or £4 a week) to keep lodgers. I believe he and James Oliver start in partnership. Our neighbour Walter Bell is still resting on his oars, preferring to wait a little to see how things turn up as at present there is a good deal of competition in his trade and he naturally wishes to keep hold of the handsome sum of money he has already made in two years time.

On the opening of the Exhibition day,[15] which was kept a holiday, John, Tom and Mr Bell took a jaunt to try and find out Charles' land (about 104 acres) which is nine miles from town, and after some trouble found it out, but gave it no great character. I expect the day would influence them a little in their judgement, as it was blowing a hot wind and the dust terrific.

You would have been amused to have seen Tom's countenance when charged 50/- each for the use of three old horses for the forenoon. Tom declared the whole three were not worth the money, so you see people pay here for acting the gentleman. Tom has just started for Bacchus Marsh about 40 miles in the bush where there is some land of a very superior description for sale, to examine it, and perhaps make a purchase.

By all accounts farming is a good job there, and in fact a farmer from Bacchus Marsh was telling me "that a man isn't worth his salt as can't make from £1800 to £2000 a year from 150 acres of land". This is no exaggeration as he does it himself, and is no farmer, either. Bacchus Marsh is a small town situated in a most luxurious district and central between Geelong and Melbourne on the way for the principal diggings.

Tom and I have now experienced a little of the Australian climate and for six days in a week on an average I think it almost impossible to have finer

---

15 The Melbourne Exhibition opened on 17 October 1854 and ran until 12 December 1854. Its purpose was to gather together goods suitable for exhibition at the Paris Exposition Universelle in 1855.

weather particularly the evenings and mornings, and although the sun is high and the day warm, it is not so oppressive as at home.

On the top of Eastern Hill we are fortunately above the insect world as the mosquitoes and such like always keep the low ground, but in place of it we have more dust than almost any other place, and in colonial slang "the Eastern ill is the ill as does catch it" in a dusty day and indeed one day in Cairns Church[16] which is close at hand, the dust was flying so thick that we sometimes lost sight of the minister; next Sunday some of the crevices were filled up.

We attend the Dr when we can get a seat, which is very difficult, many leaving the church for want of room.[17] The Free and Established Church here being on the same footing have joined together so that in Melbourne it is just the Presbyterian Church, and no difference between them. The people here are not considered bigotted [*sic*] as at home.

There was a great monster meeting of 10,000 people held this week in front of the Government House which was addressed by most of the influential people in town, the Mayor presiding, against the introduction of convicts from Van Diemans Land.[18] Some of the speakers were very violent recommending immediate separation from England, and others recommending resistance to the Downing Street mandates altogether.

There is little loyal feeling here towards England, the general opinion being that she does all in her power against their wishes. You will see by the newspapers that there are serious riots at Ballarat amongst the diggers in consequence of the ill-usage they are subjected to under the Gold Commissioners and Magistrates.[19] A regiment of soldiers are sent up to quell the disturbances.

The streets just now are perfectly filled with long lines of bullock teams taking goods to the various gold fields, they have a fine appearance with eight or ten in every team, moving along, and when as is sometimes the case two or three are in the timber yard at once it presents as much the appearance of a cattle dealers close as anything else, they take the timber up the country at from

---

16 That is, Chalmers' Church, Melbourne, the minister of which was Reverend Dr Adam Cairns. Until the construction of a stone church in 1855, the congregation worshipped in a large wooden hall.

17 Adam Cairns proved an extremely popular preacher, attracting 283 communicants in the first year of his ministry. The church was attended by Scots from throughout the city.

18 There had been a growing concern among the people of Victoria that unreformed convicts were being re-transported to the Colony after serving their sentences in Van Diemen's Land. The demonstration mentioned here was held in Melbourne on 23 October.

19 The main source of tension at the Ballarat goldfields was the introduction and enforcement of a licence that required all miners to pay a fee of 30 shillings a month. The riots themselves were triggered by the murder of a miner and the acquittal of the man many thought responsible. The administration's response to the riots sparked the famous Eureka Rebellion.

£20 to £40 a ton which adds up very considerably to the price of it, yet it pays to send the timber up.

You used to say you would like to know how our housekeeping is conducted and first in importance is our hardy highland housekeeper, who has all the say and manages very well, complaining however of the difficulty of one woman doing for four men. She is a good cook, and a very tidy, elderly housekeeper, and keeps us all very comfortable, generally by way of improving our appetite, telling us how much every dish costs, and certainly they cost a deal of money, for instance as many apples as will make a pie cost 7/6, cauliflowers 2/- a plant, green peas 3/- a lb., and other luxuries in proportion is rendered expensive here. We pay 6/6 a dozen over head for our washing and so glutted is the market that can buy good at 9/- a dozen, making it as cheap almost to buy as to wash.

I am happy to say that we are all in very good health, the climate and outdoor exercise agreeing with me to a nicety as the scales testify. My time is pretty equally divided between the yard and the wharf, taking and giving delivery of goods, and selling also, for there is a good deal of merchandise sold on the wharf.

Charles is always at the wharf, buying and selling and pushing about, he is Mr Smith and John is just plain John with most people. At present a good many stores are burned down whether intentionally or not is doubtful, as it is considered the quickest and best way of turning highly insured and unsaleable goods into money at the Insurance Office's expense, and at the same time helping to clear the overstocked market.

By the way, Chas and John have actually got the credit of being honest men to deal with, which is a very great admission here, where it is the custom to look on every man as a knave, which however has its advantages as people are not all thin skinned about being suspected, but look on it as a matter of course.

I should like very well to have a letter from some of my old friends at Melrose, if you see any of them, to hear how they get on. I hope the harvest has turned out well this year and that the Bankhead potatoes and barley were a good crop.

James and John Brodie are up the country at last after spending a good deal of money in town.

With kind regards to Father, and you, brothers and sisters and all enquiring friends, I am

Your affectionate son,
William Smith

3. FROM JOHN SMITH SENIOR TO JANE SMITH

Darnick
10 June 1859

My dear Jeanie,

We received your letter of the 16th April on the 6th instant, and were happy to learn that you were all well. Charles arrived on the 25th of last month all well, having been detained 9 or 10 days longer than the usual passage by a break of their machinery between K. Georges Sound and the Mauritius. He looks thin but is quite well.

It has been visiting right and left since he arrived but I am afraid he will soon tire of us and our regular jog-trot way. We are, as you would learn, up to our elbows in preparation for marriages, Jeanie Mills' is to come off on the 22nd instant, and your sister Alice's on the 28th. I earnestly hope they will be both happy ones. They appear both to be steady well-doing men. No high-fliers so much the safer.

All friends here I am happy to say are well at present. Mother you would hear had an illness some time ago, but is now quite well, and looks stronger than she did before she lay down.

We hear frequently from James who writes in good spirits. I hope Tom's concern is doing better than last year. We were much pleased to hear of his success at the show. Charles reports well of Willie's concern which we are delighted to hear, and indeed he reports well of all his brothers and not least of yourself.

I hope you will pay us a visit before long, if not to remain with us altogether, which last I would prefer, but you are of so much use to your brothers and so much appreciated, that the wish is almost a selfish one.

Some of them will be getting wives likely at no distant date. I think Charles should be looking about him for something of the kind, but as far as Mother and I can understand him, he has no engagements as yet nor any prospect of the kind. I am glad to hear good accounts of Robert and George.

Uncle James and family are at Darnlee,[20] and with the exception of Aunt are all well. Aunt has been ill with her eyes a long time; they leave on Tuesday next as the house is let for 3 months to Professor Henderson of Edinburgh. Lowood[21] is sold to a Mr Kidd, a London gentleman.

Mother will give you, as usual, the small news. Adieu for the present My Dear Jeanie, may the Almighty have you always in His keeping, and believe me,

Your affectionate father,
John Smith

---

20 'Darnlee' was the house that John and Thomas Smith had built for themselves in Darnick.

21 Lowood was a house and estate to the immediate west of Darnlee.

PART TWO
1869-1879

1. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
10 September 1869

My dear John,

By the above line you will see that I am still in Melbourne to which place I came for change of air after an attack of my ancient enemy rheumatism, it is now over a month since I came and I am glad to say am considerably better than when I came down. However a few days after I did come I was laid up again for a week and consequently was considerably thrown back. Rheumatism is a dreadful complaint and the pain one has to suffer is great but it is of no use complaining of it. Fortunately I was well enough to attend Willie Smiths wedding which took place a fortnight ago and there was a grand spree. Eliza came down with me a fortnight before and stayed for a week after the marriage till she got me on the straight running. James and his wife came down for the occasion. The bride's name is Christina Macpherson, and she is a very pretty girl and a member of a very nice family. She has a lot of brothers and sisters the oldest is M.P. for Dundas and Follet.[22] The old gentleman has got a fine station of 40,000 acres up in the West country adjoining Caranballac where Weatherly[23] is, it is mostly splendid chocolate soil and it is all purchased land so that he is very wealthy. I think there are six daughters five of them are now married and one is not yet. The old gentleman's health is I believe bad and he is an old man now but Mr MacPherson is all there and manages the family well. They have been strictly brought up and are reported to be all very nice people. Verily they opened their purse strings too on the occasion of the wedding as it was a very fine affair. The hour was six P.M. and it was a real scotch wedding the ceremony taking place in the drawing room which room was afterwards used as a dancing room. Of course as the hour was late the costume was full dress men black clawhammers and white neck ties the ladies in all the colours of the rainbow and in licks that would lighten some persons purses. The bride in white satin had five bridesmaids, and the bridegroom had five groomsmen. After the ceremony we paired away to the dining room young Mac[24] acting as M.C. and they certainly had a very fine table with all the delicacies of the season as the papers say and wines in profusion, champagne, madeira, claret, hock and all the others. The brides cake was a very large one 5 storeys in height

---

22 Dundas and Follett was an electoral district for Victoria from 1856 to 1976. The MP referred to by Adam was John Alexander Macpherson (1833-1894), who later became the seventh premier of Victoria.

23 William Weatherly. See Letter II.2.

24 The aforementioned John Alexander Macpherson.

and by the way the artist seems to be proud of it, as I see he has got it framed and photographed and exhibits it in his window in Collins Street. We had the usual toasts on the occasion and to our surprise Hetherington praised the bridegroom very much having known his father Mr John Smith of Darnick an eminent architect. Menzies, Hetherington's coadjutor,[25] also followed suit and told what a good character he had of Willie from a gentleman in Geelong (Campbell).[26] Robert returned thanks for the bridesmaids and he had an elaborate speech prepared which he proceeded to deliver and had got as far as about the one half of it when he suddenly forgot the balance. Luckily it did not seem mutilated as he stopped just when the subject changed. He delivered it very well. After dinner or breakfast or collation, whichever it was, dancing began upstairs and it was kept up with vigor till 4 o'clock or past so we were informed by Captain Anderson who makes a point of always seeing these things through. I had a quiet game of whist James, George Wilson, Willie, William and I and only turned in occasionally to have a look at the dancing. Willie and his wife stayed for a dance or two then they drove off to their own house and next day to Geelong and Queenscliffe[27] where they stayed a week. By the way I saw a waiter do a smart thing at the wedding. He was turning a corner quickly with a cup of coffee in his hand slipped on the marble floor fell freely out and managed to preserve the coffee cup and not to spill very much of it either. He must have been a ship's steward I think as most men would have let everything go to save themselves.

Willie's wife seems to be very amicable. She has very kindly ways I think. The old lady her mother has been very liberal with or rather to her daughter. She paid 175 guineas for her piano and Willie tells me has filled the house with piles of what for want of a better word I call napery. In fact Willie seems much pleased with the old wife's pluck and ways. The young couple have got a very nice house (Jane's) and as it is newly painted from top to bottom and newly furnished it looks very well.

I was glad to hear by last mail through James of the welfare of your wife and youngsters. Mine have had what is called Colonial Pock, but they are well again as also is Eliza. James and his wife are all well. They heard from James at Sydney the other day and he is all right again. Trade is pretty good at Ballaarat at present and James is kept busy. I am tired of loafing now and want to go to work again if I could but am not quite up to the task yet. By the bye I forgot to mention that the Reverends Hetherington and Menzies are I think the only two Church of Scotland clergymen in Melbourne and perhaps in the colony

---

25 Reverend Irving Hetherington and Reverend Peter Menzies were co-ministers at the Scots' Church, Melbourne.

26 The port settlement of Geelong lies *c.*74 km south west of Melbourne on the shores of Corio Bay.

27 The borough of Queenscliffe lies *c.*31 km south east from Geelong.

and they are both good ones and stand strongly out from the dull line of dissenting uniformity of which the ranks of Victoria's Presbyterian ministers are composed.

I must pull up now as I am getting sleepy and with love to your wife and bairns,[28]

I am my dear John,
Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

2. FROM WILLIAM WEATHERLY TO JOHN AND MARY ANN SMITH

At Mr and Mrs James Smith's
Ballarat
1 January 1870

My Dear Mr and Mrs Smith,

It is now a long time since I wrote you and will not even now give you much – I only arrived here tonight from home and as Mr Smith is busy writing you I take the opportunity of enclosing a few lines with his. Mr and Mrs William Smith were with me at Carranballac[29] last week and went on to Mr McPherson's, Mrs Smith's brother. I was not at home when they came in, but just came in about dusk from our annual Streatham Races where I was fortunate enough to win a race with one of my little nags.[30]

I have 73 cattle down here for tomorrows market and also want to dispose of 5000 fat sheep and in about two months will have 8000 more this will show you in what large numbers we dispose of in the course of the year. I sold over 20,000 last year and this year share 49,153 sheep and from these had a clip of 626 A/. representing a monthly value of about £14,000.

But you will already know all about station news from your friends out here, so that I scarcely know what to write about. I have travelled a long journey since I had any correspondence with you and I never care to write home as I have no news to tell them. Mr Chirnside my employer will I expect soon return to the Colony, but whether he will stay out or not I cannot tell.

---

28 Scots for children.

29 After a failed venture in sheep farming, William Weatherly paid off his debts by working for leading pastoralists and family friends Andrew and Thomas Chirnside. He was currently working at Andrew Chirnside's 50,000-acre Carranballac station, near Skipton, Victoria.

30 Streatham is a town *c.*80 km west of Ballarat.

The land has caused me many an anxious night, having been put up for selection and when that is the case it generally falls into small holders who are often not the best kind of people and capable of doing any mischief – however, I have been very successful in getting a great portion of it back a little over what it cost them.

My brother James was with me for over twelve months and has gone to look after another of Mr Chirnside's stations further up the country. You would be astonished to see such numbers of cattle, sheep and horses and how they are managed. A shepherd will have a flock of 3,000 and in fenced runs, one man has 3 or 4 horses and looks after 12 or 14,000 sheep. Horses and cattle look after themselves until there is a general muster when we have some exciting amusement and require to look pretty sharp about ourselves in case of getting gored [they] are not like the quiet cattle at home.

I will very likely go home tomorrow again if I can pick up a customer for sheep. I cannot give you any news as any thing I can tell is quite uninteresting. You are now married and a family man.

So kind regards to Mr Smith self and family.

I am,
My dear Mr and Mrs Smith,
Your old friend,
William Weatherly

3. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballarat
7 November 1870

My dear Leaderfoot,

I must just put pen to paper to let you know of the welfare of myself and my belongings[31] although I have really and truly very little time for writing this mail. Eliza and the bairns are all well I am very glad to say and so are James and Grace but James has had a sprain which has laid him up for the last three weeks nearly he got it while pushing a log forward to the saw.

I am glad to report business a shade better than it has been although very far from being what it ough[t] to be yet but I think now that it will improve bye and bye as there are several elements at work to bring it about again I think.

---

31 *i.e.*, his wife and children.

We are in a state of immense excitement when the last war news came to hand and are now impatiently awaiting the advent of the next mail.[32] The last news made a profound sensation when we heard that the Prussians had been winning every battle and had invested Paris. I go for the French myself, at the beginning of the war I did not care much but felt inclined to say in the words of Byron Arcades ambo blackguards both[33] now since France is a Republic my sympathies go with them entirely and I hope that they will ultimately beat those greasy Germans of whom I cannot say I have a great opinion. At any rate I am glad that it is not British soldiers who are being slaughtered wholesale. It seems to me that it would be a bad thing for the world if Prussia conquers France as although nominally Protestant I never saw a German yet that was anything in the way of religion and certainly Prussia is the most despotic monarchy in the world at the present time this Bismarck having within my memory effectively quashed the incipient struggles of the Prussian Parliament or its equivalent after freedom. It is melancholy and at the same time amusing and instructive to see an educated people bowing down prone to such a thing as monarchy in the nineteenth century. Why dont they pension all these beggarly fellows off. A free man in a free Democratic country like this feels himself a power in the state in these King governed lands they are only puppets to march off and be shot at by tuck of drum. If we are misgoverned here we misgovern ourselves but we have the making of our own laws and it is our own fault if we are and we have no hereditary legislators nor Kings to say do this or that although for that matter if we had no one would mind them so apt is a new country to develope [*sic*] democratic ideas in its inhabitants. I hope to live to see these countries now by their respective rulers brought into such straits free and enlightened republics.

I hope James Smith is getting better poor fellow and that he has had no return of his malady. He is a nice chap and his wife is a wise woman. Gideon Turnbull has again honoured Ballaarat with his presence he came about a week ago and expected his money to be here when he came but it does not appear to have come yet.[34] He means rowdyism towards Robert[35] if he does not get it by next mail. His temper seems to be about the same I think.

Willie's body has not yet been found so far as we have heard.[36] The floods in Australia have been dreadful all this winter and there is not a district in Victoria that has not suffered from them. Ballaarat has again been visited by a

---

32 The Franco-Prussian War, which was fought from 19 July 1870 to 10 May 1871.

33 Adam is indicating that, at the beginning of the war, he thought one party was as bad as the other. The full quotation from 'Don Juan' is '*Arcades ambo*, *id est* blackguards both'.

34 Gideon Turnbull, Adam's cousin, had arrived in Melbourne on 16 December 1863 on board the *Great Britain*. For the Turnbulls, see the Introduction.

35 *i.e.*, his brother Robert Turnbull.

36 William Turnbull was another of Adam and James' cousins.

very large one and the damage done by it has been enormous and many of the poor fellows in the main road have been utterly ruined. The flood submerged at various depths I should think three quarters of a mile of shops closely built on both sides of the street and two people were drowned and many gallantly rescued from certain death by the fire brigades and others.

The General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church begins its sittings this week in Melbourne. All the ministers in the Colony attend it and make a sort of grand once a year clerical corrobboree[37] of it. Mr Henderson goes off tomorrow for it.[38] James is secretary now to Henderson's church and makes a very good one.

I must pull up as I am near the end of my page and have still to go to the post and it is late. Eliza joins me in kindest regards to your wife and yourself and I doubt not Flora if she were awake would send kisses to "Unkin John's nitten girns". I wonder if you can English it. The key is that she uses n when she should say l. She often askes [*sic*] after them. Goodbye my dear John and ever believe me

Your affectionate Brother,
Adam Smith

4. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballarat
7 November 1870

My dear John,

I was glad to hear good accounts of [*word missing*] if not from you by last mail, you are indeed luck[y] to get a good crop well housed under tha[t]ch and rape in the early part of September and I suppose with a European war going on there is a chance of good prices for all kinds of provender. I met with [an] accident more than a fortnight ago having sprained my foot but am now I am glad to say almost well ago [*i.e.* again] and able to be about though I was confined to the house for some days but good nursing on Grace's part and a judicious application of the pump worked wonders.

---

37 A corroboree is a ceremonial meeting of Aboriginal peoples, but the word is being used here in a wider sense to describe a large, important gathering.

38 The Reverend William Henderson was the minister of St Andrew's Kirk, Ballarat. He had also been one of the founders of Ballarat College.

We were very glad to hear that there is no immediate prospect of James Turnbull coming out. I am sure it would be very foolish were he to think of it. The Colony is perfectly inundated with fellows of his stamp and they are a perfect nuisance to every body who has anything to do with them. Gideon is back here again from New Zealand. He came more than a week ago. He will be loafing about I expect untill [*sic*] his money comes out. He is at present doing nothing. The trustees at home in that will of uncles seem to be in no hurry in sending them out their portion. I had not heard of any of them having got anything but £5 yet.

We have had a very wet winter and spring here but are now having some glorious weather. This is about the finest month by [*sic*] the year. All the European deciduous trees are so fresh with the first green of spring and even our own evergreen greens are looking fresher and greener. The acacias too of which there is a great variety of indigenous trees are glorious. Our crops too all over the county seem to promise well. The farmers thought the rain was doing for all of them but I think we will have one of the finest crops that has ever been in Victoria.

There was a grand agricultural show here about a fortnight ago but the weather was most unpropitious the rain falling in torrents.[39] The Governor Lord Canterbury[40] was up at it. The Duke of Edinburgh is in Melbourne just now but there is no notice taken of him publicly.[41] He is not much thought of here having pretty well worn his welcome out. From all accounts he is a snob.

We have had great floods all over the Colony and Ballaarat has had a fair share of it. We had the worst flood about ten days ago in the low lying part of the town that has ever been since it was a town.[42] By the way you know I suppose that Jim Blake has a wine shop there. Vintry he calls it. The flood waters were two feet deep in the shop and in some of the stores adjoining they were seven feet under water.[43] You may imagine what destruction to property and goods there must have been. All the rain which caused it too fell from 12 midnight till about ½ past one only an hour and a half. No one ever saw such

---

39 The twelfth annual show of the Ballarat Agricultural and Pastoral Society was held 19 and 20 October 1870. It featured the usual displays of livestock, agricultural machinery, and farm produce.

40 John Manners-Sutton, 3rd Viscount Canterbury, was the governor of Victoria 1866-1873.

41 Alfred (1844-1900), duke of Edinburgh, the fourth child of Queen Victoria, had arrived in Melbourne on 22 October during an informal visit to Australia. His official state visit of 1867-1868 had been the first by a member of the British royal family and included a widely celebrated and well-received visit to Ballarat.

42 The flood occurred on 29 October, with Bridge Street suffering the worst damage. A detailed report, 'Damage in Bridge Street', appeared in *The Ballarat Star* 31 October 1870.

43 According to the aforementioned report in *The Ballarat Star*, 'the damage was very slight' in the Vintry.

rain fall except after a few heavy thunder storms. Most people never knew of it till they were woke up and found their places all flooded.

What a terrible war is at your door. I hope England wont be dragged into it. I am sure they have sense enough of the horror of it to give both parties a wide berth. I must confess that my sympathies go with the French and I think so would the British but for the royal family influence for Prussia on the one hand and the will [*i.e.* ?wilful] unreasoning Pro French sympathies of the Irish. I hope Paris will never fall into the hands of the Germans such a fine city it would be a shame to storm it. The Pope poor body seems to have had to quit Rome at length I suppose he will get back again shorn of his temporal power.[44] I have a great disliking to the despotic teachings of Prussia and I dont think that Liberty will be a bit the better for having a strong German power predominant in Europe to the spoiling of the more liberal French nation.

Now my dear John I must pull up. Adam and all his belongings are well. Grace is also well and desires to join me in kind love to Mary Anne and yourself and kisses to the bairns and I am

Your affectionate brother
James Smith

5. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballarat
2 January 1871[45]

My dear John,

Thanks for your letter duly to hand by last mail and from which I was glad to hear of the welfare of yourself and all your belongings to all of whom Grace and I desire the compliments of the season and many happy returns.

We were sorry to have no letter from Mother by this mail but comforted to know that she was all right. I hope our sisters enjoyed themselves in Perth. I am sure the change would do no harm being a fair jump out of the usual groove. We are all moving on here in our quiet usual [*word missing*]. Business I think rather improving. Grace is very well. I never indeed saw her better.

---

44 The Italian Army had captured Rome on 20 September 1870, leading to the end of the Papal States.

45 The letter is actually dated 1870, but the reference to the Franco-Prussian War indicates that it was written in 1871. Being only the second day of the new year, James probably wrote 1870 out of habit.

Adam and his wife and bairns are well. Charlie has been complaining a little of dysintry but is better I think. I myself am very well. This is a holiday but we have been busy stock-taking and getting out the accounts. I was down in the office at ½ past 4 this morning, not a bad start for the first work a day morning of a new year. After dinner Adam and I went up to the Highland Gathering for a couple of hours and a very successful one it was.[46] I hope this year will be a better one than the last in the way of business which has been a very bad one indeed little doing and many bad debts. I think things are shaping better towards the end of the year. I think I forgot to mention last mail that Willi Turnbull's body had been found about two months ago.

While on the subject of these Turnbulls by the way I may mention that Gideon got his money out by last mail and from having been a daily and all day visitor at our yard we have never had a sight of him since. I fear he is what is colonially called 'knocking it down'[47] and I suppose wont stop till he gets to the end of it. I heard he has taken a house and is furnishing it though what he means to do with it when furnished I do not know. He seems to be much demoralised I think for though he behaved well ever since he came over from New Zealand till now it seems to have been simply because he had not the wherewith to go on the spree. I fear he is now wasting his substance on zealous living.

I hope we will soon have a wind up of Affleck's affairs. The best that his family can do is to facilitate a settlement. He of course will get the balance of any. Nixon and I are heartily tired of it. According to the legal opinions we had he has no other course to pursue. I would gladly have been clear of it now but will have now to see it through. They are all an unsatisfactory lot.

The band of the Highlanders are just now playing Auld Lang Syne, as a wind up having returned from the Games. You can I dare say imagine the feelings which it inspires in a fellow far from home and the inclination even in a fellow "come to forty years"[48] as Thackeray hath it to feel a little rheumy about the optics. Ones heart warms to the old places especially on such occasions and finds little of such extraneous circumstances to make him feel a little queer.

How about that beard you are growing? I wish you would send us out a portrait. I have not had one yet since I came out and am getting so grizzled about the beard and napper that I do not care much about having it taken. Grace says I must however, so I suppose I shall have to do it.

---

46 The annual Ballarat Highland Gathering had been established in 1859 by the Highland Society of Ballarat. At the 1870 event, a velocipede race was included among the more traditional athletic events of tossing the caber, etc. Prizes were also on offer for piping.

47 *i.e.*, spending all his money on alcoholic drink. The term refers in particular to a person who hands over a cheque or an amount of cash to a publican and calls for drinks for himself and his friends until the money is exhausted.

48 A quotation from 'The Age of Wisdom', a poem by William Makepeace Thackeray.

Willi Smith was here this week en route to his brother in law's and will be back on Friday or Saturday. They are all well.

I hope this horrible European war is over. I was so glad the Prussians had not gone to bombard Paris.

Now my dear John. I must pull up. Grace desires to join me in kind love to Mary Anne and yourself and kisses to the bairns and I am

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

6. FROM THOMAS SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
2 January 1871

Dear Cousin,

Willie being up the country on a visit to his father-in-law['s] station, and not intending to be back ere the mail leaves, asked me to forward you the enclosed, a [bill] of exchange for one thousand pounds to 'Violet'.[49] The second I will send in a Darnick letter to Violet, in case of this miscarrying, but trust will reach all right.

Willi said he would write you from his up country quarters. Mrs Smith is with him also [his] son; we have not heard how they got there; Adam was down in Melbourne last month looking the picture of health and reported all well there, and business improving. We have now got over the holidays, today being the last of ditto, is singularly cool weather, more so than I have seen out here, quite like Scottish ditto, in my little family we were most quiet, as for the last three days, we were almost hourly in expectation of having Lillian (the little one we had at Darnick) taken from us by convulsions, but thank God she is better today, and the doctor was hopefull [*sic*] of her recovery and tonight is looking well and off to bed and I am looking forward to having a good sleep having had none I may say for three nights and so feel very tired and trust you will thus kindly excuse the shortness of this note.

By the way last week we had a visit from Andrew Murray, our minister of Melrose's son,[50] looking strong and well, the image of his father, he came here from Sydney in a ship of his own, his first visit to Melbourne.

---

49 For Violet Smith, see the Introduction.

50 Andrew Murray's father, William, had been the minister of the parish church of Melrose from 1836 to 1865.

Wishing you, Mrs Smith and family the compliments of the season and many happy returns in which James joins. I remain my dear John,

Your affectionate cousin,
Thomas Smith

7. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballarat
27 March 1871

My dear John,

As James may not write to you by this mail, poor fellow, it falls to be my duty to record for your benefit as head of the family the event which will prevent him doing so. On Saturday 25th, Grace was confined of a child, a little girl, her illness was very protracted and at last the child was still born. I cannot of course as I do not know about these things enter into the circumstances but I know this that James and his wife are both much dissatisfied with their doctor and are of the opinion that the child ought to have been born alive. You may be sure that they are very much disappointed at the event and I can assure you so are Eliza and I as we think the advent of a child to a house is the very best thing that can befall the house that is to say if they have not one at all. There is nothing like a little youth for knocking the dust out of people's old corners and awakening their sympathies. James is very much cast down about it and no wonder poor fellow.

I have had rather fishy times of it myself lately having since last mail had two separate attacks of my enemy and the last one a very severe one this is my first day out of bed after being there for a week and suffering a very great deal of pain indeed. My wife had her own to dos with me and James came over several nights and sat with me when the pain was very bad which it was almost every night. I only got about an hours sleep per night for six nights and one or two not even that and now the way I can roll it off is astonishing as soon as I cease to read or write over I go and last night when I went to bed I slept at once all through the night and never awoke till broad daylight this morning. I think it is the pleasantest part of it to make up sleep at the end of the day.

We were glad to hear good accounts of you all in the north and hope my mother got over her threatening of bronchitis all right. My wife and youngsters here are all correct the latter so noisy that they annoy me when I particularly want to be quiet. They talk a great deal about their cousins in Scotland and ask questions that would baffle a wiser man than me.

I am glad to hear that Elliot is getting a little benefit from Saville and hope that it will cure him from his pains under the circumstances it seems to me to be very likely that the pills will put it away.[51]

As I am only newly up my dear John and still in the hands of my disease I hope you will excuse this letter which is by no means what it ought to be.

James has brought in the enclosed draft for £50 which please place to our credit and with much love to yourself your wife and bairns in which Eliza joins me and kind regards to all the Darnick people.

I am my dear my dear James,
Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

8. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw & Moulding Mills
Doveton & Dana Streets, Ballarat
22 April 1871

My dear John,

I was glad to hear of you by last mail and hope all of you have got rid of your colds. Glad also to hear of the welfare of all at Darnick with the exception of little Jane at Darnlee and I am sure the whole affair with her will be bronchial. I have had the same more than once myself and however unpleasant to see I know just as well where it comes from as any doctor could tell her. I am sure hers will just be from the same cause.

Grace I am glad to say is improving in health but her spirits are very low and untill [*sic*] she gets them up she wont get much strength. Her nurse leaves her today and I dont know how she will get on but expect it to be all right. I have had her out for a drive today. It is just a month since the untoward event happened. You will be sorry to hear that Adam is still laid up. He was pretty well at the beginning of the week and was out on the Monday and Tuesday but for the next day he was ill and has not been able to move since. Poor fellow his spirits are very low. I think I never saw him so dull. He thought he had got round pretty well and is so down hearted about his back I think he is fully worse than he has been all this illness though I have seen him worse before. The week before last he had been very bad and unfortunately did not send over

[51] John Saville, a pharmaceutical chemist based in Yorkshire, made pills for various complaints, including constipation, indigestion, and biliousness.

for me. Last night I was with him till 4 this morning and left him there comfortably dozing and he was better all morning. The night before he was pretty well and when I left him about ½ past 10 he had first had the bed made and thought he would rest pretty well but I think he must have got a little cold when he was sitting up and he passed a miserable night. I think his wife is by no means a good nurse and between you and me many a time I could have kicked her backside out of the room. She does not seem to understand illness at all and I think is a most intensely selfish woman impulsively kind but cannot keep it up from day to day and wont want her nights sleep for anything. Far different from the way my Mother managed when our Father was ill.

Trade is quiet and things generally dull.

Glad to hear the war is over. France seems to have got a tremendous black draught and blue pill from Providence. I hope she may profit from it.

I have been pretty close held at it for some time and would be glad of a chance to get away with Grace for a few days but have no chance just now.

I had a call from a Mrs Pearse today with whom Willi Turnbull used to lodge and left in debt something like £20 to her which she is now anxious to get. She was going to write to the trustees and asked me about it. I said she had better write to James Elliot and gave her his address. I said I would mention to you if I was writing that I believed it to be quite correct and if you see them I think I would feel obliged if you would mention it to heirs. I think they should pay her. All the Turnbulls have loafed ou[t] here. Gideon has gone into the auctioneering. I have not heard of him having had a sale and never expect to hear of it.[52] I think he will soon go through his money and I fancy is generally in a state of beer.

Now my dear fellow I must stop. I have not much heart for the writing just now most things seeming rather thrawn.[53]

With kind love to Mary Anne and yourself and kisses to the bairns. In all of which Grace joins me.

I am, dear John,
Your affectionate Brother,
James Smith

---

52 Gideon Turnbull took out a notice in *The Ballarat Courier* (5 April 1871) announcing his intention to start business as an auctioneer and commission agent. It would appear as if James' pessimistic prediction came true, however, as no further adverts for the business appear in the Ballarat newspapers and it is not listed in any subsequent directory for the city.

53 When applied to events, as would appear to be the case here, the Scots word thrawn can mean intractable or not amenable.

9. FROM THOMAS SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Eildon, Corner of Gore Street and Parade
Melbourne
12 August 1871

My dear John,

It was with extreme regret that we learned by last mail of the severe and painful loss you had experienced on the death of Mrs Smith.[54] Please accept Louisa's and mine sincere condolences, little did we think when last we saw your household that your children should so soon be motherless and the poor mother so suddenly removed them. Another painful reminder of the uncertainty of our probation here and the urgency of being prepared for death by making peace with the Almighty through our sav[i]our. How comforting it must be (to you and all interested in Mrs Smith) the knowledge that she is with the Redeemed in Heaven and also that she was so prepared for death. No doubt it must have been comforting to her ere she departed to know that the children she was soon to leave were in such careful keeping and surrounded by the kindest of friends. But I must close by again expressing (in which Louisa joins) our warmest sympathy for you in your affliction.

With kindest remembrance to you and cousins, believe me to remain my dear John,

Your affectionate cousin,
Thomas Smith

10. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw and Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
12 August 1871

My dear John,

It was with the most unfeigned regret that I heard by last mail of the death of your dear wife Mary Anne and I do not know what comfort to give you under the circumstances for left with the lot of youngsters to look after all on your own hook it is a great task and one that you will want the help of our father

[54] John Smith's wife Mary Ann(e) (occasionally Marion) had died in June, aged forty-one.

who art in heaven to do. It is a comfort to know that she was so well prepared for the end but then that is just the beginning of your difficulty and having in our mind the knowledge that God tempers the wind to the shorn lamb. I hope that in your experience you will find in his dealings that he is a God of mercy as well as judgment. I hope you will find some one to look after the upbringing of the young children while the cares of the world are your concern as I am sure they are quite enough for any one to look to. I would I know as well as you do where to turn to for help under such circumstances and I am well assured that the God whom you trust in will be with you in your need.

When I wrote home last mail I was on the broad of my back and I have been pretty well laid up ever since but now pretty well able to go about again. Though rather weak upon my pins.

Grace I am glad to say is well having a swelled face having been rather troubled with face ache for the past week. I have been telling her she has any amount of cheek, the which joke she does not seem to appreciate. Adam is very well, better indeed than I have seen him for a long time, which is very fortunate considering my illness. The wife and bairns are well and thriving.

Business is doing very dull more so I think than I ever knew it no business doing in town and what little we are doing in the country districts. There is a general complaint all over the goldfields just now of little business. I hope things will mend. Adam will be writing you and giving you all the news.
I have not much heart for writing feeling much dispirited over my lameness. Grace in the home letter will supplement this epistle and think of many things I have forgot. I have the Darnick crocuses and daffodils flowering in our green[55] just now which is pleasant to contemplate and with kind love to you and kisses to the bairns in which Grace joins with our kindest sympathy for your affliction. I am my dear John,

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

11. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballarat
12 August 1871

My dear John,

The last mail brought us bad news from Darnick of the death of your wife and I can assure you that nothing we have heard from home has affected us so much

55 Scots for a garden attached to a house.

for a long time as the event was untimely and unexpected to us as well as to the Darnick people. It is a very sad thing to think of her being cut off in the very prime of her strength and leaving a young family too. I have no doubt my dear John but that God who sent the blow send an amelioration of it to you as in his infinite mercy he does not fail to do but yet it must press very heavily upon you even although and in all our earthly trials the words of Holy Writ are the most true, which say the heart knoweth its own bitterness. I have always tried to bow to the will of the almighty our Heavenly Father and even in this case where he removes the mother of a family and the wife of her husband although I cannot understand why it is done nor see the wisdom of it. I shall put it down to my limited capacity and say even so Father. I hope that God will comfort you my dear fellow and that you yourself will be spared to shepherd the youngsters up to men and women and by Gods blessing put them in the right way of doing their duty to society the world and their maker. I feel very keenly for you I can assure you but as before this reaches you a considerable amount of time will have elapsed since Mary Anne died. I shall not say any more about it but leave the subject.

We have very quiet times here at present in Ballaarat and I do not know when they are going to be any better either as mining is so dull but we live in hopes. I think so far as I can see that things are dull all over the world just now and that mens minds are not speculative nor hopeful as they used to be but inclined to keep as they are without being moved to any new enterprises. I think the present influence that is over the world must be atmospheric as those who have been observing the sun for the last two years say that there have never been such enormous disturbances in that body since ever it has been observed and contemporaneously with the red aurora we have so often seen the last two years have been flames projected out 100,000 miles from the sun's disc. At the same instant these have been observed magnetic storms have prevented the working of the telegraph wires here. The doctors say the atmosphere here is surcharged with ozone. I do not know how all these things work but I hope they will all work for good and that we will ultimately be the better for it all.[56]

My wife and bairns are all well. I have so many of them now that I cannot go over them all but to reduce them to the two genders I may say that the lasses and the callant[57] are getting on as well as could be expected. Ula is learning to read very fast. The callant has not begun to talk yet.

---

56 There was a marked increase in solar activity in 1870 and 1871. Local newspapers regularly carried reports and comment on the various phenomena and the effects that it might be having upon daily life on Earth, from the alarmist 'The Earth to be lapped up by fire' (*Bendigo Advertiser*, 17 May 1870) to the matter of fact 'Enormous spots upon the sun' (*Brisbane Courier*, 30 June 1870).

57 Scots for a boy or a young man.

My wife joins me in kindest love to you, the bairns send theirs to their cousins and I send mine to my dear John to you and the bairns both. I wish I could go home to see you, but it is not likely at present.

Goodbye my dear John, ever believe me,

your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

12. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw & Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
1 January 1872

My dear John,

A happy new year to you and Agnes and all the bairns, and when you look back over this old one which has just gone out into the past you will find a very sore place for many and ny [*i.e.* ?many] to come but God who tempers the wind to the shorn lamb will make the pain less as time does those things. Grace and I have also had our share of trouble too, but a very small drop to your big sorrow and yet we too feel a blank where there might have been joy and gladness. Good for us indeed it is that we know not what is in store for us of good or ill. Willi Smith too poor fellow has been sorely stricken. John too has had his share of sorrow as well as joy. Little Violet died the beginning of last month and two days before he had a little son born to him. Louisa and all the rest are well and she is making a good recovery. Tom was elected on the board of the National Bank last week which will [be] worth £5 a week for fees. Grace and I have both had colds and she has not been out all day. We have had very hot weather with cold ones now and then and not been careful enough in the way of clothing I think. Adam and all his folks are well. Our fruit is ripe now that is to say the cherries are about done the gooseberries about ripe. Grand country this is for fruit. We get it of all kinds from tropical Queensland and Fiji to temperate Tasmania.

We had a grand expedition fitted out to take notes of the eclipse of the sun last month. The party chartered a steamer and went to the north of Australia in the centre of the line of totality. The expedition was in a scientific point of view a total failure as they never saw the eclipse the clouds were so dense.[58]

---

58 The steamship *Governor Blackall* had been chartered to carry members of the Solar Eclipse Expedition to a suitable place off the north coast of Australia to observe the eclipse that was taking place on 12 December 1871.

You will see by some papers and Punch I send you how Johnny Ingles has been putting his foot in it.[59] He has got an awful amount of hard hitting from all the press in Victoria. He had gone far too much beyond his mark and like the Ancient Mariner the man hath penance done and penance more will do.[60]

The harvest is now ready to be gathered and a fine crop. I believe as a rule there is a difficulty in getting harvestmen at this holiday time but the reaping machines cut it down very fast.

I was up the country about a month ago and never saw it looking finer or giving promise of plenty in the land both for man and beast.

We were very sorry to hear that you had hurt your back and I hope that you will soon get over it and get strong and well again. It does not do so well dear John as it would twenty years ago my boy. I hope mother will get the better of her lumbago too poor body. And now I must close. Grace desires to join me in kind love to you and Nat and in kisses to the bairns and Jane.

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

13. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw & Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
1 February 1872

My Dear John,

James has got your letter so I suppose he is answering it. Many thanks for it and the budget it contains.

I am very glad to hear that Nixon in his settlement left you an executor with such a decent screw as £200. The estate ought not to be difficult to realize upon as he has been long out of business and must have had his affairs brought up pretty closely. I wish poor Mrs Sutherland had lived to benefit by her share.

---

59 The Reverend John W. Inglis, minister of St John's Presbyterian church, Ballarat, had been accused of plagiarism and falsehood. He was admonished by the presbytery, but judged more severely in the press. The *Melbourne Punch* was particularly persistent in its coverage of the affair, and over the following weeks featured poems, mock adverts and other pieces lampooning Inglis. It even coined the word 'Inglisism' for those who followed 'The thieving example set by Rev. Inglis' (28 March 1872).

60 A line from 'The Rime of the Ancient Mariner' by Samuel Taylor Coleridge.

I was mentioning to our lawyer a little while ago about the non payment of James Turnbull's legacy of which not a penny has ever been paid to us. Robert wrote offering £750 about 15 months ago and wishes to keep the balance to liquidate some of Jim's debts. Our lawyer told us in confidence that if Jim comes out and the money not paid we are entirely at the mercy of any unprincipled lawyer that likes to advise Jim to enter an action against us for laches.[61]

Now this may seem a distant contingency to dwellers at home here fifty lawyers would only be too happy to get the job. Now would you be so good as [to] let us know how the case stands, whether it is that Robert cannot or will not pay it because we must do something shortly either by throwing up our acceptance of trusteeship and appointing others or by sending a power of attorney to Mitchell[62] with instructions to get the money which would not be a very nice thing to do. The money was payable at Whitsunday 1870 and on the 2nd Jan 1871 we wrote to Christopher Douglas[63] asking him to let us know when it was to be paid and asking payment but he took no notice of our letter. If you see James Elliot you might ask him the bearings of the case.

Business is very dull here yet I am sorry to say. How are all your children I hope they are well. You are well off to have Agnes. Mine are off at the seaside just now and enjoying themselves. I believe the weather has been distressingly hot and many deaths from sunstroke have occurred. The changes are trying there was a difference of fifty six degrees between Sunday and Monday about a week ago. That Sunday was the hottest day I have felt. I was at church in the evening as well as the morning and I never listened to a sermon under such difficulties and yet the clergyman was very lively indeed and much worth hearing.

The Revd Ingles has put his foot into it and has been very much blackguarded for using some other man's lecture. The newspapers have walked into him and have by no means let him down easy he will not try it again I think. I was delighted to see Henry Brown of Selkirk the other day who is out here for the benefit of his health. What a nice brisk fellow he is.

I must pull up and with kind regards to yourself and family.

I am, my dear John,
Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

---

61 *i.e.*, it would be contended that Adam and James showed a lack of activity or diligence in asserting their rights as trustees to the prejudice of James Turnbull, and the claim barred.

62 Alexander Mitchell, a partner in Mitchell & Baxter, Writers to the Signet and law agents based in South Charlotte Street, Edinburgh.

63 Christopher Douglas was a Writer to the Signet based in Hill Street, Edinburgh.

14. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballarat
21 May 1872

My dear John,

I duly received your letter by last mail for which many thanks also one from Agnes for which I am much obliged. We were glad from both sources to hear of the health of yourself and Agnes and also of the youngsters and hope that you will keep the same clear bill of health for many a day. I am glad to say that we are all well here and going on fairly.

I am quite surprised at what you say about Newtown[64] which must have shot ahead greatly since I left home. Is it only busy one day in the week or is the town increasing in life and people settling down in it. I am glad to see that Freer and Dunn[65] return their energy and keep pace with the increase of trade. They used to be spirited fellows. Trade is middling here at present, not so bad as it was but nothing to boast of.

We should like you to apply to the trustees under Uncle William's settlement either to relieve us from our debts as trustees for James Turnbull and appoint two others or send out the money that was left to him by his father's will.

Robert Turnbull wrote asking us to take £750 and let him keep the £250 to pay some debts of James' which we declined to do. At the same time we made an application for the entire sum. On the 2nd Jan 1871 we wrote to Christopher Douglas making a formal demand for the money to which he has not deigned an answer and as the letter has not been returned to us he must have got it.

Our solicitor says that we must either get an immediate release or instruct some Edinburgh man to take proceedings for the recovery of the money as with a man like James Turnbull our position is most unsatisfactory. If he were to come out here Cuthbert says any one of the lawyers with which the place swarms would only be too happy to have a go at us with an equity sent for the money and if we delay much longer he says they would gain their case. As it is, he says our application to the solicitor he thinks would just clear us of laches in the matter but his advice is short and clear the money or a satisfactory release. Now if you would be so good as write or see Mr Elliot or Mr Douglas and get this matter arranged we shall be very much obliged to you as we do not like

---

64 Newton (latterly known as Newton St Boswells), a village about three miles to the south east of Melrose, had gradually grown in size and prosperity since the arrival of the railway in 1849.

65 Freer & Dunn were a firm of writers (lawyers) based in the High Street, Melrose. They also acted as agents for the Royal Bank of Scotland in both Melrose and Newton.

the cavalier way in which we have been treated by the parties nor the position we hold in the matter and shall not rest till it is put on another footing.

Agnes asks me in her letter if my hair is getting gray. It has been gray for many a year and my beard is now interspersed with white hairs but the black still predominate considerably although they will not long do so. But I think I possess great resistive powers or I should not have been alive now and I have many a time wondered at myself when hirpling[66] along I have resolved to walk like other people and by the very resolve have done it no matter what pain it cost me thereby resisting disease all I could and helping my recovery. James is greyer than I am.

With kind regards to your fireside I am

my dear John,
your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

I will write to Agnes next mail.

15. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
10 September 1872

My dear John,

I write you from Melbourne where I have now taken up my abode I hope for good or at any rate for a long time, as business in Ballaarat[67] has now got much quieter than it used to be in former years.

Willie having decided to go out of the business gave one of us the chance of coming in to it so your humble servant is now here having commenced operations about three weeks ago. Of course James and I are still together in this way that each is a partner with the other in both adventures he remains at Ballaarat and carries on the business there and I share with him and he shares with me down here which I think is a fair and square thing for all parties. I cannot tell you how sorry I felt to part with James with whom I had worked for so many years with fewer words I shall venture to say than any two partners in Australia and such a staunch fellow and a good friend to me as he has been.

---

66 Scots for walking slowly and painfully or with a limp.

67 'Ballaarat' was the official spelling of the municipality from 1852 to 1994, although during this time the town was often spelled 'Ballarat'. In everyday circumstances, they were often used interchangeably.

There is no man I like in the world as well as him, but as the offer was too good a one to be refused, I accepted it joyfully although the statement seems contradictory and so did he.

Business fluctuates very much in Colonial towns and Ballaarat is no exception to it but Melbourne is generally pretty good and steady as compared with all the others.

Our cousins have behaved very well and very kindly all through to us and in this matter they have been exceedingly so and given us such an opportunity as not many people get and I hope I will get along well with Robert and do my best endeavours for the prosperity of the concern. I have left my wife and youngsters up at Ballaarat till summer comes on when I shall bring them down here in the meantime they are as well I think where they are. I heard from James to day and they are all well and so are Grace and he.

Having now done my duty in reporting to you as head of the male branch of the family the important step I have taken (a sort of feudal feeling I can never get rid of) I shall pass on to other subjects and first in re James Turnbull's affairs when I saw James last we talked the matter over and are willing to do anything that will secure ourselves in the matter but the cavalier way in which we have been treated by Robert is not soothing and we are by the opinion of our solicitor at this moment liable to a suit in equity for £1000 with two years interest and more, and if James Turnbull should come to Australia he would not be many weeks in the country till some blackguard lawyer picked him up and served us with a notice of a suit for the money. Tam Scott[68] was an angel of light compared with some of our Colonial men of law. Under these circumstances therefore we are now desirous to have it so that we do not run any risk and if you could obtain for us from Robert Turnbull security for the payment of the legacy we shall be satisfied or indeed will be quite satisfied to leave it in your hands altogether. I will only make the remark that Robert is what is called here a duffer[69] and it is a thousand pities that he should not have had to work for his bread.

Robert has been telling me that he wrote to his brother Andrew last mail suggesting that Willie should be allowed by the Trustees to purchase the house he lives in in Powlett Street the one that Charles built a place that since he lost his wife is now hallowed to him by many memories both pleasant and painful.[70] He would like to do it himself I believe but does not say so. I think

---

68 Thomas Scott was a lawyer in Melrose. His house at Abbotsmeadow had been built *c.*1826 by John and Thomas Smith of Darnick.

69 In Australian slang, a 'duffer' was someone who was engaged in cattle rustling. It is much more likely that Adam was imagining the British meaning of the word, *i.e.*, a person who proves to be without practical ability or capacity in a particular occupation.

70 William Smith's first wife Christina had died at St Helen's, their home in Powlett Street, Melbourne, on 3 October 1871. She was aged just twenty-six years.

it is the best thing you could do under the circumstances and as he is about the best judge of property that I know and one of the most punctiliously honest men, you may rest assured that he will give the estate full justice.

By his skilful management of the business and of John's estate I know to a certainty that the estate will turn out many [*two words have been heavily deleted and the following interlined*: many] thousand pounds better than it would have done had it been wound up when the recommendations came from home to that effect he has not said any thing to me about it at all but Robert says he is sure he would like it so Andrew[71] and you can con it over.

I am glad to hear good accounts of your family by your letter to Smith Brothers and hope they will all go on and prosper as the Germans say. I miss mine very much but there's a good home coming. One thing I am glad to come to Melbourne for and that is to hear a Church of Scotland minister as they are all Free Church and UPs[72] up the country. I went on Sunday evening last to hear a Mr Menzies a churchman and did not I enjoy every word.[73] I was delighted and in the words of Burns promised myself lapfuls large of Gospel Kail[74] from a Licentiate of the time honoured and God honoured Church of Scotland. I find I always know a great deal more myself than UP parsons and Free Kirk too with few exceptions. I know you will not approve of my sentiments but those they are. At any rate my sisters do not as I got a dreadful letter from home some years ago when I gave them a brothers advice about adhering to their first love. The firmest one I ever got in my life but one which should only have been written to an infidel. If you had heard as many poor preachers as I have in the colony and listened to their lame efforts as I have done always however with the courtesy and patience of a Scottish gentleman I hope you would be charmed to hear one of your ain[75] folk again and so am I. I am a great advocate for an educated ministry so these few observations on matters ecclesiastical <u>let me out</u> on the subject I think.

Robert and Willie are well and <u>all there</u>.

Love to Agnes and Dunlop and Betsy and all the other members of the family and ever believe me

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

---

71 Most probably Robert's aforementioned brother, Andrew Smith. He was the tenant of the farm of Castlemains in East Lothian.

72 *i.e.*, ministers of the United Presbyterian Church of Scotland.

73 The aforementioned Reverend Peter Menzies of the Scots' Church, Melbourne.

74 A line from 'The Ordination' by Robert Burns.

75 Scots for own.

16. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO ALISON SMITH

Melbourne
10 September 1872

My Dear Mother,

As usual last mail brought good accounts of you all for which we cannot be too thankful – and I am glad to be able to report that we are all well here, particularly the little fellow who is out at present with Aunt Prissy[76] for a drive at the sea side to see the ships which delight him immensely.

Adam is now down helping at the yard and is doing first rate and likely to be a success, and I go there as usual and lend my help to push on the business which is pretty fair at present.

At Mr Cohen's urgent request, and he being one of my colleagues at the Bank, I went the other day and saw his daughter "Mini" married according to the Jewish form under a canopy in the centre of a large room, all the gentlemen being obliged to keep their hats on during the ceremony, which with the Hebrew prayers lasted a long time. There were about 140 Jews and only 8 or 10 Christians present and a very interesting and impressive ceremony it was. Mini was a schoolfellow and a great friend of dear Tina's. I had been a tee-totaller (but not pledged) for six months previously, but drank a bumper to Mini's happiness and have now again subsided into a temperate man.

Both of my servants are still with me and manage to get along very well on the whole which is very satisfactory, for numbers of people have much difficulty with theirs.

Old Mr McPherson has not been very well for the last few weeks but felt so well today that he has started to go up to the station as the shearing begins immediately, he says however that he will turn back again if he does not feel well. This will be another very good year for the squatters[77] and the Morton Plains people will do very well as the season has been so good. I feel pleased at it doing so well as I all along had faith in the place, and thought and said it would turn out all right. We are going out the day after tomorrow to dear Tina and her mother's grave. We have selected some nice flowers to plant over them. Last year at this time they were both here as happy as the day is long, but God willed that it should not continue so.

I have not seen James Blake for some time but when I saw him last he was much cut up at the death of his sister, but said it was not from cancer indeed

---

76 Robert Smith's fiancée, Priscilla Jane.

77 The term 'squatters' was originally used to describe European settlers who had taken up residence on Aboriginal or Crown lands without legal authority. By this time, it was widely used to describe people of high social standing who grazed livestock on a large scale.

he read me a letter written by her two days before her death to the sister in Queensland in which she herself particularly said that it was not cancer and that she expected to be all right in a short time – showing how uncertain life is.

After a very long and wet winter we are now having dust and hot weather and today it is very unpleasant. Trusting you are all keeping well and with kindest love to you, Elizabeth and Jeanie, I remain, dear Mother,

Your affectionate son,
William Smith

17. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw and Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
7 November 1872

My dear John,

Your favor by last mail duly came to hand and was pleased to hear good accounts of the health of all your belongings. We were very sorry when little Jane at Darnlee was not progressing so well as we all could wish and glad to hear that Jack Elliot is improving and is now convalescent. I think a trip out here would do them both a very world of good and you should see them packed off about the beginning of the year and they would be in time for our fine autumn weather. About 7 or 10 days would take them into fine weather which they could carry all the way to Melbourne. I think it is worthy [of] consideration and a few months long here would possibly do both good.

Within the last few weeks we have had the telegraph line through W London completed and so far as I can see ~~as~~ regards the public news "the game is not worth the candle". Individually it may be a great convenience but to commercial folks but I would about as soon be without it, the Home News paper will be half read before we get it out.

I enclose you draft for £88..1/- £50 of which is for our a/c and the balance £38..1/- for Jane which please pass to our Cr at [*illegible*] a/c.

I forgot untill it was too late today to get a power of attorney from Adam and I for Mitchell and you to act in James Turnbull's affair indeed I forgot untill today that the mail went till this day week and Adam was up yesterday to Melbourne for chance to have got it done. However it is now with Cuthbert the lawyer's hands I will doubtless be ready by next mail.

Adam is looking well and is free of rheumatism. He will no doubt give a good a/c of himself. He [has] had a deal of roaming all over the colony now.

Robert is to be married the beginning of the new year. Old Mac has given his consent and the young lady is eager for the fray.[78] Gideon Turnbull is still about Ballaarat but I never see him – I am told he is very seedy and hard up and only comes out like the Nighthawks. He is a puzzle to me.

We had the Agricultural Show yesterday which was [*illegible word*] successful the weather being fine the second day.[79] The first there was a heavy storm of rain and thunder of which I got full benefit being then out in the buggy with one of the men. The rain came down like a blanket and we were wet in a couple of minutes or less. We had also a heavy thunderstorm this afternoon. The crops promise well. I was sorry to hear by wire that the harvest in Scotland was a failure. I hope you managed to pull yourself [from] the fire.

Now my dear John I must pull up and wishing you all a happy Xmas and new year I am my dear John

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

18. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
17 June 1873

My dear John,

After an enforced silence last month caused by my being on the broad of my back I now feel called upon to put pen to paper more than usual this mail seeing that I feel able for the job. I was in bed and ill last mail very much pained indeed with mine ancient enemy. It has tried for several months to give me an acclimatizing to Melbourne but I always resisted to the very uttermost and for a long time successfully but I grew tired of it and one day when it came with a good deal of venom I said Ah, you've got me and went off to bed. I had a good long tack of it I assure you and a lot of pain. Mrs James came down and nursed me through the worst of it just as my own old woman used to do and I am sure I can never repay Mrs James for her kindness to me and she staid for three weeks till I could go out again. Fortunately, business kept pretty good all the time so

78 'Old Mac' was John Macpherson, the father of Robert's fiancée Priscilla Jane.

79 The annual show of the Ballarat Agricultural and Horticultural Society had been held on the 5 and 6 November. The newspapers declared it a success, with around 7,000 people attending on the second day. For a report, see the *Geelong Advertiser*, 7 November 1872.

that I had not many troubles on that score but I did grudge lying up when there was plenty of work to do. I am now about again and hope to continue.

I was sorry by Agnes' letter to see that Jane still continued poorly and that my mother was not very ~~bad~~ cauld.[80] I hope the next mail will bring us better news of both of them. Jane has been ill for a long time. By the submarine telegraph I saw that the Hydaspes[81] reached home on the 23rd May an event which calmed my mind and gladdened my heart. I hope my wife and bairns are now safe with their [*sic*] mother and my heart warms when I think they are all there and all safe. I think they will have to stay a year or two at home till my finances recruit. Latterly business was very bad at Ballaarat and when I left it I was not exactly clear. I am allowed to draw £300 a year half of which I send two to Eliza and have one to myself with which I have been paying off odds and ends. But what would put me right would be if you could get me £200 or £250 on my property as that would clear me and put my mind at ease. You see as I had a family and James none my expenses were always greater than his.

Violet wrote to me this mail before last and said she was going to excuse me the £200 which she had over my property a deed of generosity I accepted as I at present am not able to refuse it although my scantiness of coin is only temporary. I would not have you to say so but I think it will be curious if £1000 or £1200 is not written to my share this year. Two months more will tell but that is not available for me as it must go to my capital account. The above is confidential. Well if you could get me either of these amounts it would ease me. If you do not approve of it let it be, I cannot help it but would like if it could be managed. At any rate do not tell all the connection and do not let it come back to Melbourne. [*the surviving letter ends here*]

19. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
12 August 1873

My dear John,

I did not get written to you last mail as I had a great many letters to write. I am very much pleased to have heard of the arrival of my belongings at home and I dare say by this time they will have been down in Scotland and you will all

---

80 Scots for cold, used to describe the temperature and as a name for the common infection. Neither of these meanings quite make sense here.

81 A steamship that had been converted to a sailing ship. She had accommodation for sixty cabin passengers.

have seen them. I do not know exactly where Eliza will settle down, but if she requires any advice I shall be very much obliged if you will befriend her in that way. If the neighbourhood of London is too expensive for her she might drop across a cheaper place about Melrose however she will be able to judge herself. I dare say she mentioned in the letter that young Elliot of Burnsmouth had called on her and seemed to be much struck with the purposelike appearance of the young fellow describing him as most gentlemanlike. I am glad the youth has recovered so well and hope he will get right with the change back to the Liddesdale breezes.

I was just mentioning to my mother that it was fourteen years yesterday that James and I sailed from Liverpool so that it is just fourteen years since I saw you last. I do not know if you have changed much but I know I have. I have about as many white hairs as black ones both in beard and hair and generally look "an old file" now. I think however rheumatism excepted my constitution stands it out pretty well and I am now following a regimen with regard to diet and exercise by advice of a great Melbourne authority which I most fervently hope will put it out of my system. If you can arrange to get that loan on my property for me I shall be much obliged to you as it will put me right here. I will soon be able to repay it as at stock taking on the 1st of July the results shewed first rate though you must not talk of it but between you and I it showed over four figures written to me. If I have another year as good I could then ask for the money out of the business and repay it. I think you have a power of attorney authorising you to mortgage and I hope you will manage it for me.

Business keeps good here there is a great deal of building going on in Melbourne. Squatters got so much money for their wool last year that there have been over two millions to invest a difficult job in a small community like this. The Government is also flush of money and doing large public works which all help to keep Collingwood sawmills going.

James and his wife were down here lately and both well. He reported trade as being very quiet at Ballaarat which it is sure to be when mining is so dull. I begin to like Melbourne now quite as well as I did Ballaarat. I am getting to know many people now and consequently to be known and I no longer feel like a stranger in it. It is a very fine place for trade is Melbourne with a most restless population.

I was glad to hear of all your welfares by last mail. It is the first thing one thinks of with the home letters when you have seen that your friends are all well then you can read the details in peace and quietness. I see by the papers that the harvest at home is telegraphed as a good one and I hope you have come in for your full share of it to make up for last year. Do you still plough the whinny brae or have you laid it down in permanent grass? It used I remember to be ploughed with ae fur.[82]

---

82 Scots for one furrow.

I was sorry to see the death of poor Jim Burnet in the newspaper. He has lived to be a good old age poor fellow. They ought to have given him a masonic funeral. In Australia they would only have been too happy to have had the chance if he had been here. He was a great man for the Melrose Lodge.

I see you have now got the new education bill in operation in Scotland and so have they got their new one in Victoria. Both of them I believe are for secular education only which seems to be the fashion nowadays.[83] Pity they don't read the bible out here where there are so many Catholics nothing but secular education I think would do or else they have quite as good a chance to make Protestant children Catholics as vice versa. I believe the Government allows the board of advice to use the building for religious purposes after school hours and on Sundays and I believe the respective churches are all in arms and looking after their children. I am sorry that the old parochial schools are to be supersed [*i.e.* ?suppressed *or* superseded] in Scotland though as they live in my memory as the most democratic institutions in Scotland where gentleman's son and hind's son alike went to and learnt to feel an interest in each other instead of the class system where they regarded each other as aliens. The older I get the more democratic I am. Goodbye my dear John,

Ever your affectionate Brother,
Adam Smith

20. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
10 October 1873

My dear John,

I received your letter by the last mail as also one from Agnes which I am sorry to say I will not have time to reply to by this mail. Business has been rather brisk lately and so I have had very little time on my hands, but I am very glad that it is so and like to be up to the eyes in business as they say it is very much pleasanter here than in Ballaarat as the transactions are large and we certainly do get chances everyday that they never see in ~~Melbourne~~ Ballaarat at all. We go in for big licks as they say here last week we bought three cargoes of cedar

---

83 The Education (Scotland) Act of 1872 had transferred parish and burgh schools to a new public system and made elementary education compulsory for children between the ages of five and thirteen years. The Education Act (Victoria) of 1872 had established a state-controlled system where education was to be free, secular and compulsory for all children aged between five and fifteen years.

all at once. The week before that we bought two cargoes of Kauri Pine and these all over the usual purchases. A fellow feels rather crouse[84] when a whole cargo is knocked down to him. Our demand from up country is now setting in as the weather gets better and as there are lots of Government work this Summer the season is likely to be a good one.

I am very glad you are likely to send me the money by this mail. I was very short of it for the last year or two and if you do I am sure you will have removed an incubus from my mind which has weighed me down so that I could scarcely live or care to.

Ballaarat has been very bad the last few years. You will not say what I am telling you to anyone but our prospects are bright now compared to what they were. Last season I mean the twelve months since I came down from Ballaarat with a much smaller capital than formerly the business had produced over six thousand pounds. After paying the percentage on the money invested in it and setting aside £1000 for bad debts in case they occurred my share and what will be written to me when Robert comes will be £1500 for the 12 months and perhaps 150 more out of the above thousand. If we are lucky enough to avoid bad debts this year I hope will be equally good when I say I or me it means us both now such a yearly balance will soon make us shew up and I am sure I think we deserve it as we have both worked hard.

I tell this to yourself alone and you must not tell it to anyone and take no notice of it to James as I did not tell him the full figures as it would only increase the jealous feeling his wife has. I use that expression only as being necessary to elucidate the reason and with no personal feeling.

I must conclude, and I am, my dear John,

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

21. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Freemason Hotel
Pall Mall, Melbourne
4 December 1873

My dear John,

By last mail I received your letter enclosing me draft for £250 which I can assure you I was very glad to receive and many thanks to my sister Violet for

[84] Crouse has a number of meanings in Scots, although 'pleased with oneself' is no doubt the one intended here.

letting me have it and many thanks also to you for negociating [*sic*] the transaction. I can now get along and will very speedily pull up and out through the difficulties that were so very dense ahead of me. Australia is all very well when it goes with you but if it goes against any one and he has long to pull against the stream all that I have got to say is Heaven help him. I have had the wind in my face of late and just wanted what Violet and you have sent me to let me breathe again and get nicely through and take advantage of the position. I am now in to get fairly afloat again and make up my leeway.

I enclose you a promissory note on demand for the amount and as Violet has been so kind as to let me have the money without mortgage I enclose also a paper to you registering you to mortgage whenever she may desire. I hope a year will see me clear again. Many thanks to you my dear John for your kindness in the matter.

I had my usual letters by last mail and from others as well as from yours I could see that our mother's state is very precarious and we judged indeed from the tenor of your letters that you did not expect her to live and indeed were preparing us for the chances that we would hear by the following mail that she was no more. We cannot look for anything else at her advanced age but it will make a great blank to us out here as well as to you at home as we have been so glad always to hear of and from her and valued her letters far beyond anything else and we are therefore looking with fear and anxiety to the arrival of the next mail now due in a fortnight. Personally I feel very thankful that my wife and bairns saw her before she grew ill and I hope that she gave them her blessing. I wish she gave it to me too as I am the only one that has not seen her. What a well spent life she has lived and what a diligent one and in the early part of it laborious one she has had and latterly what a gentle one. Poor old lady it must have required a heap of pluck and courage to have feughen[85] such a large family up to men and women. We cannot help hoping that there may yet be more days for her.

Eliza has been very much delighted with her reception and the kindness you have all shewn to her [*interlined*: and the bairns] and I am very thankful for all your kindness to them. Everyone at Darnick she says has been so kind to her and she has never been so happy before in her life. In writing to her this time I mentioned to her that as she did not seem to have spoken to you I would write you and ask you to give her your advice where to settle down for a little while with the bairns so if you would drop her a note and discuss it with her I should be very much obliged to you. Cheapness is a desideration for her as she finds from the altered state of everything at home that she cannot live on what she expected and I am afraid her heart will be failing her but if she was put on

---

[85] Feugh has a number of meanings in Scots, although none of them quite match what appears to be intended here, unless Adam was trying to convey that his mother worked with energy or fought hard to bring up her children.

the right track I know it would be all right with her and I think cheap lodgings in your valley somewhere would be about the thing for them all say Gattonside or Melrose or Darnick if my sisters would not find it too near to be annoyed by the bairns. If you would give it a little consideration my dear brother I am sure I should be very glad. Entre nous[86] I send her £16 per month and I dare say if it was necessary I could send her some more as soon as I get a few more months over my head and and [*sic*] pay some things that want paying. I hope to get them back before long but they must remain and spend as little as possible till I get all right out here that is the position of matters.

You will see from this that I am on one of my up country trips and write this from Sandhurst[87] where it is warm and no mistake too warm to sleep at nights. Tom and his wife and bairns were all well when I left Melbourne as also Willie and his callant. James was down a week ago and reported all well. I am glad to hear a good account of your bairns and I have again to thank you for your kindness to mine. I hope next mail will bring us better news of my mothers health than last one did and with kind regards to all at home I am my dear John

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

[*The following notes were written on a slip of paper enclosed with the letter.*]

Melbourne 4 December 1873

£250

On demand I promise to pay Mrs Violet Smith the sum of Two Hundred and Fifty Pounds value received.

Adam Smith

Melbourne 4 December 1873

In consideration of Mrs Violet Smith's having advanced to me the sum of £250 I hereby agree to mortgage my property in Scotland to her when she shall desire the same to be done.

Adam Smith

---

86 French for confidentially.

87 A town in Victoria, *c.*150 km north west of Melbourne. It is now known as Bendigo.

22. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
25 February 1874

My Dear John,

I received your letter by last mail and was very glad to hear from you and of the welfare of yourself household and all friends and the dear old lady at Darnick. I cannot sufficiently thank you all for your kindness to my wife and bairns. Eliza's letters abound with expressions of gratitude to all of you including yourself for the kindness she received when in Darnick and Roxburghshire generally and I am sure my dear brother I thank you all from my heart for it. She had never been so kindly treated in her life and I am sure no people have ever been so well done to as they have been when staying among you. I hope they will now get quietly settled down. I would have liked very much if you could have found out some crib that would then have suited them in Gattonside, Darnick, Newstead, Melrose or neighborhood and my mind would have been at rest.

I am sure Eliza will have nothing but difficulties in London with her limited income however, we shall see but I wish it could have been arranged. In regard to Mr Freer wishing to lease the Bleachfield park[88] I do not think I would like to let it on a lease as it shuts one out from doing anything with it for that time. So far as my feeling goes I should prefer it from year to year as it has always been. I think a well might be a good improvement but it would take a very deep one I doubt, however I am willing to do it if you think it necessary.

I wish Elliot would let his son come out to Australia. It would do him all the good in the world both physically and mentally every young man should things are so different here that the timid spirits are glad to go back and remain and the bolder go back with their ideas enlarged and improved in many ways. If ever I can spare the money I shall let Jock[89] if I am spared go about and see the world before settling him down that is to say if my ideas do not change by that time if I live to see him by about that the age that John Elliot is. Young Elliot would see lots of economical dodges in his line that would pay him and we would all lend a hand to put him through as they say here. I would like to see the young fellow. I was delighted that my boy took to you so much the little man used to be very fond of me and liked me to show him around when

88 Bleachfield Park lay to the north of the small settlement of High Cross, between Darnick and Melrose.

89 Jock would appear to be Adam's pet name for his son Charles.

he could get the chance and used to perch on the garden gate and watch till I got home in the evenings, poor little fellow.

I agree with most of your remarks about being tight for money for I know all about it and have swallowed many pills in that way, but yet can sing of mercies too for which may God give me a grateful heart. However, the discipline is not pleasant but somewhat bitter yet I suppose it is all in the day's work.

We have lost our minister Mr Menzies who died of consumption yesterday. He was the best preacher I ever heard in all my life and gave his hearers more to think about than any other could out in this colony. He had a most cultivated mind a most subtle genius a manly and straightforward bearing preached Christ always pure and simple and in conjunction with his extremely lucid and simple Christianity never failed to branch into some subject and elucidate what had been barriers in the way of everyone. The papers all unite in saying that he was the first of his profession and a national loss, so think I. We have one coming out and not before time, Mr Hetherington now being very old. With much love to Agnes, yourself and all your bairns

I am, my dear John,
Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

23. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw and Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
19 April 1874

Dear John,

The mail which arrived about a fortnight ago brought us I am glad to say good news of all from all of you and I am glad to say that we on this side of the globe so far as our own circle of friends are concerned are all well. Grace and I went down to Melbourne and spent our Easter holidays. We went on the Thursday before Good Friday and came back on the following Tuesday having stayed all the time with Tom. Louisa and he were both well and very kind. I don't know whether you heard by the last mail that he was unsuccessful in his candidature for the representative of West Bourke[90] but he was, though he made an excellent [*illegible word*] for it having lost his election by 20 votes only against

90 West Bourke was an electoral district of the Legislative Assembly in Victoria.

the old member which was very good for a first attempt. Had the electors generally thought he had polled so well I think he would have gone in with flying colours so many would have voted for him who take to vote on the winning side. He was rather disappointed over it no doubt but will have better luck next time I doubt not.

Our Ballaarat elections take place on Wednesday next the general election being taken in three batches extending over a month. The two first are over and Ballaarat, Melbourne, Geelong and the principal town constituencies are all in the last batch. It is likely to be a keen contest both in the town and city of Ballaarat and as there are about three times as many candidates as there are seats the question as to who would get in is a very open one. I mean to go for the liberal members of whom I think my namesake Smith will go in and I fear our late colleague Jones will go out.[91]

What a surprise the result of the first general election in England under the ballot must have been to everybody. It certainly surprised me and I think the Tories giving neby[92] such a majority.[93] I fancy they must have been tired of Gladstone. We in the Colonies looking with more judicial feelings than perhaps you are, England would have been far from satisfied with the manner in which he sustained the honor of the Country in its foreign relations. I think the man perhaps is too old now for the office of Premier though it has been held generally by old men but he is constituted mentally very differently from most of his predecessors.

I was rather sorry to see Scotland which has hitherto been so strongly liberal turning a greater proportion of conservatives than it has done for many a day.[94] Surely too the result of the Irish Elections must have surprised the red hot home rule men who expected to carry every election their own way.[95] Perhaps a change from the so-called liberal to the conservative side for a while may not do much harm but good though the tendency of legislation must now be necessary liberal. I was glad to see that two real representatives of the "working classes" have been returned an element in parliament that badly wanted representing.[96] When I remember elections first none but a lord or the

---

91 The 1874 Ballarat West election was won, as James predicted, by William Collard Smith.

92 Neb means beak or nose in Scots, so this would appear to be a Scots version of 'beaky', the pejorative nickname given to Benjamin Disraeli, the leader of the Conservative Party.

93 The Conservative Party had won a convincing victory at the 1874 United Kingdom general election.

94 The Liberal Party had lost eleven seats to the Conservative Party in Scotland in the 1874 general election, although it remained the dominant party there, winning forty of the fifty-eight seats contested.

95 In Ireland, the Home Rule Party had won sixty of the 101 seats being contested.

96 Two Liberal-Labour candidates had been elected in 1874, Thomas Burt and Alexander Macdonald.

scion of some noble house had a chance in elections but the times are changed and it will I think be better for all classes when the representatives of the people are taken from the much broader basis of the people themselves than from the members of an aristocracy whose only distinguishing feature is privilege.

I hear from Adam that Tom Smith is going to contest the Central Province Election for the upper house (our colonial house of lords) for the seat vacated by Sir John O Shannasy who was candidate for the ~~general~~ assembly or lower house having resingned [*sic*] his seat the other day to contest the Kilmore election the verve of the more popular house being more to his taste than the somnolent qualities of the so-called upper house. If I were him I would sooner wait and stand my chance of election for the more popular body at [the] next general election which cannot be more than 3 years and in all likelyhood [*sic*] will be in less. I dont think he would get in for the Central Province at any rate.[97]

We had very wet weather the week preceding last which put a stop to the volunteer encampment which should have taken place at Sunbury.[98] Talking of Sunbury on Easter Monday Grace Adam and I went up to Sunbury and later visited Jim Blake and his vineyard and spent a very pleasant day. His vine crop is a total failure this year so far as the black vines are concerned the rain having totally spoiled their fruit and in the white grapes they will not have above one third of a fair seasons crop and that of wine of an inferior quality. He had got about as neat a place there as I have seen in Victoria and is a very lucky chap with his house and all his belongings. It is a great country up there for coursing the hare having been thoroughly acclimatised. We started three one after the other in quick time in Blakes paddock and they were the first I had seen in their wild state in the Colony. We have plenty around Ballaarat but I have never seen one before.

Business has been rather better lately but still it is dull enough. We are on the eve of a change in Ballaarat. I don't know whether it will improve trade or not. Hitherto this town has been the terminus of the railway which was opened when Jane was here.[99] Indeed she went down to Melbourne by train the day after the formal opening and now the extensions up country are almost ready to be opened. As all roads lead to Rome so all railways lead to Melbourne which town is now to the Colony very much what the powhead[100] is to the incipient frog far too big for its body and doubtless that city will benefit by the railway extensions but it is more doubtfull [*sic*] it will affect towns like Ballaarat.

---

97 Thomas Smith must have changed his mind, as the two candidates for the Central Province in the election in 1874 were F. T. Sargood and A. K. Smith.

98 A township *c.*38 km north west of Melbourne.

99 Ballarat Railway Station was opened on 11 April 1862.

100 Scots for tadpole.

Lots of people think it will ruin trade but I am inclined to take a more hopeful view of it and look upon any change as for the better for the timber trade. We have a local material hardwood that Melbourne cannot supply and I think we will get an extension of our trade in that timber up the country and in other matters of trade which we get from the seaboard we must try and hold our own. Besides Ballaarat is the centre and headquarters of all the mining in the Western District and this in itself brings a lot of outside trade to the town which Melbourne never can get. We will see however how it turns out. I wish I could look with your eyes on it and be able to say that though times were not so perfectly to ones liking as they might be here yet that there was a certainty as to the next world as you mentioned in a later letter.

Our home letters lately have been full to overflowing about revivals and a particular chronicle given of how many were sealed to Christ on some particular occassion [*sic*]. I dont think any man can tell whether he is sealed or not and if you will look at the 2nd chapter of 2nd Timothy 19th verse you will find it laid down as follows. "Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure having this seal. The Lord knoweth them that are his". Decent loving good men too are nothing if they cannot say that they "believe". What does Paul say "Prove all things hold fast that which is good".[101] We can hardly ignore the lesson of the Bible about who is fit for the Kingdom of heaven. Job came through his troubles with the approval of his maker holding fast what he thought to be good for notwithstanding the reproach of Bildad he declared his intentions "I will not remove mine integrity from me. My righteousness I will hold fast and will not let it go. My heart shall not reproach me so long as I live".[102] And what does David another of the holy men of old say in answer to the query in the first verse of the 15th Psalm "Lord who shall dwell in thy tabernacle and who shall stand in thy holy hill. He that walketh uprightly and worketh righteousness and speaketh the truth in his heart" and so on to the end of the psalm but concludes "He that doeth these things shall never be moved".[103] And again in the 24th Psalm "Who shall ascend into the hill of God and who shall stand in his holy place. He that hath clean hands and a pure heart who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity nor sworn deceitfully. He shall receive the blessing from the Lord and righteousness from the God of his salvation. "This is the generation of them that seek him of them that seek thy face O Jacob."[104] I need not remind you of the beatitudes as delivered by our Savior in his sermon on the mount and ask what there is there to make one turn ones back upon every thing but belief which is a capacity after all which

---

101 1 Thessalonians 5:21.

102 Job 27:6.

103 Psalms 15:1-3.

104 Psalms 24:3-6.

many minds are gifted with only from having looked at one side of the question. It is like the old story of the shield with the gold and silver sides the man on either side declares it was one metal or the other as he saw it and would not take the trouble to go round and see if there was not some reason for the opposite opinion. If we arrived at middle life cannot take a fair clean view of these matters so far as finite minds can understand them how are young and old people to do it. I speak for myself and a great many men of my acquaintance and cannot trust the salvation of our Lord to the small number of so-called "believers". I believe after my own fashion but stagger at many things which my own judgment which God has given me seems to condemn. If the ~~modern~~ exponents of Modern Religion Moody and Sankey[105] are right what can we make of the landmarks of the past and what will you say of our father and mother (yet alive God bless her) who never were converted but stedfastly [*sic*] loved mercy and walked humbly with their God. It is true now as it ever was mark the perfect man and consider the upright for the end of that man is peace. In contradistinction to the religion of the present revival read that as depicted in some of Bret Hartes stories in a volume entitled the Luck of Roaring Camp.[106]

Now my dear John I must conclude. I don't often sermonise so you must take this one in as good taste as you can. Kind love to Nat and self and kisses to the bairns.

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

24. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
21 April 1874

Dear John,

I duly received yours of the 19th February and was glad to hear of the welfare of all of the Darnick and round about people. I see you have let the Weirhill

105 The American evangelists Dwight Moody and Ira Sankey. Their meetings in Scotland had been attracting large crowds and helped to spark an evangelical revival.

106 *The Luck at Roaring Camp and other sketches* (1870) was a collection of stories by American author Bret Hartes. Their setting in the goldfields of California would have made them particularly resonant to a resident of Ballarat.

field[107] to Alan Freer which I have no doubt is a good plan as you recommended it. When I wrote to you last on the subject I had the idea that it would be better from year to year as the additional rent is a trifle after all and I thought it was not worth tying it up for that time for such an increase but I have no doubt but you know best and though I would just as soon have it annually I shall be perfectly satisfied whatever you do. My remembrance of the height of the field above the Tweed makes me think that water will only be raised by a force pump. If it was about Ballaarat they would sink a shaft and drive.

I see Robert Turnbull rides very rusty[108] about paying his brother James' legacy. Has he not got the money do you think or what is the matter or does he wish to put James' board as a set off against the legacy. He very coolly after he had some experience of poor Jim's loafing propensities proposed that he should come out here again but our answer was no sirree. We have not heard anything of Tom Turnbull for some time. Did he get a settlement with Robert and do you know if he took his wife to Falnash[109] they are all a precious lot.

I had a letter the other day from Gideon he is stock riding up near St Arnauds[110] and has been tee total for about a year. Do you know if he has any claim on Robert for a share of Willie's money which was never paid to him, he has been writing to Robert and thinks he has. I do not know the Scotch law of succession but if Gideon has any claim and can screw as much as will take him home Robert may look out as these Turnbull's do <u>love</u> each other. John Boston is much further advanced in the last stage of consumption than he was when I wrote last and it is very pitiful to see the poor fellow so thin and wasted. I do not think he has written to his brother as he is an exceedingly quiet and shy man who will endure but never complain. The doctor whom I saw a few nights ago said that he might go at any moment.[111]

Tom Smith made a good fight for the West Bourke constituency but did not get in. It returns three members and Tom was twenty below the third.[112] However he polled 1140 votes and astonished everyone as he had veterans

---

107 Weirhill lay between Darnick and Melrose. A settlement of villas and two churches (one belonging to the Free Church, the other to the Episcopal Church) had recently been built on part of the land.

108 The contemporary slang phrase 'to ride rusty' appears to have been used to describe various levels of obstructive behaviour ranging from dragging one's heels to acting in an angry, violent way.

109 A farm in the parish of Teviothead, Roxburghshire.

110 A gold mining town and district in Victoria, *c.*244 km north west of Melbourne.

111 John Boston, formerly of Langshaw, Melrose, died on 19 May 1874 in Melbourne, aged thirty-four years. He was a partner in Gill & Boston, Kensington Tannery, Melbourne.

112 Thomas Smith received 1,165 votes, losing out to John Madden (1,694), John Smith (1,306) and John C. Riddell (1,185).

against him. Tom will have a better chance next time as I dare say he will be more reserved as when a man gives out his political opinions too openly it just gives them a handle to pick holes in his coat. He has made a very creditable exhibition however and one that the family may be proud of. Willie and George Wilson are up for re election on Thursday at the Colonial Bank as Directors and although they are all opposed will go in flying. Poor George Wilson is laid up with an attack of rheumatism or rheumatic gout he has it in every joint in one side. He is only half as bad as I was last year at this time as I had it in every joint of both sides and back and neck as well. Wilson was howling with the pain. I am glad to hear that all your youngsters are well. I must conclude and with kind regards to Agnes and all your bairns,

I am, my dear John,
your most affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

25. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
15 May 1874

Dear John,

I enclose a statement showing the investments and annual income of my late brother John in this colony by which you will observe that the income is as near as possible £2000 per annum, the unremitted portion of which has hitherto been reinvested and is included in the above statement, but this at any time can be easily adjusted either now or at any future time when the home trustees wish it, by realizing a portion and so reducing the corpus of the estate to its original starting point. Knowing that this could be done, I thought in the meantime while the expences of the children are less than they will afterwards be that it was unnecessary to remit the whole particularly as as good interest can be got for it here as in Scotland. The investments are all such as can readily be realized with the exception perhaps of Smith Bros which as you know ~~was~~ existed while my brother John was in the business (one half of which I took) and this will require to remain till things improve in Ballarat.

Adam keeps well and strong just now and Robert and he keep busy at Collingwood Sawmills. You would hear that I joined Charles Mills and Nielson in the purchase of a station in Riverina[113] and we think it will do very well.

[113] Uardry, which was in the New South Wales region of Riverina.

Today Charles sent a telegram that he had purchased the freehold of 9000 acres [*interlined*: of it] at 20/. an acre at the Government land sale at which we are well pleased as it prevents [*illegible*] from taking some of the best of the Crown lands on the station.

Trusting that you and your children are all well and strong

I remain
your affectionate cousin,
W. Smith

[*The following statement was enclosed with the letter.*]

Statement showing investments and annual income in Victoria
of the estate of the late Mr John Smith Darnlee

1.	Mortgage of £4500 on Halstead and [?Kins] property at 7½ per cent		£337	10
2.	Sum of £7000 remaining in the firm of C. & J. Smith at 6 per cent		420	-
3.	Share of advance to Smith Bros Ballarat £3332 at 8 per cent		266	10
4.	Goodlet & Smiths advance £1268 [at] 8 per cent		112	-
5.	130 Shares in Colonial Bank £6.10/ paid up at 8 per cent		67	12
6.	264 Shares in Collingwood Gas Company divd 12/ per share		158	8
7.	180 Shares in Melbourne Gas Company 6/		54	-
8.	Share of Western Market Buildings leasehold value at £837	say	83	14
9.	Mortgage of £675 on Mr Grimstons property [at] 8 per cent		54	-
10.	3 houses in Evelyn Street after deducting taxes repairs etc.		200	-
11.	1550 acres at Yangindook let to H. Campbell		218	-
12.	£425 paid up shares Warnambool Gas Company 6 per cent		37	10
			£2009	4

Melbourne15th May 1876 W. Smith

P.S. the sum of £820 received from the estate of the late Mr George Smith is included in the above statement.

26. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
12 July 1874

My dear John,

I received your letter by the last mail and am still so unfortunate as to have rheumatism in my hand where it has been for three months so that I can only

write this swiftly and my hand is very easily tired, so I hope [*interlined*: you] will make an apology for me to the people at home.

I was sorry to hear of Elliot's death he has been a very satisfactory member of the family and to speak personally of him I used to like the fellow very well when I was at home and when I knew him. He was a very worthy member of our connection. I am glad to hear such good accounts of his son and I hope the youngster will fill the paternal boots but I think you should send him out in the world for a year and let him see what is in it he would settle down contented at Burnmouth. I should count this an indespensable [*sic*] part of a man's education that would be one of the favoured ones that succeeds to property at home. I have not spoken to James about James Turnbull's claim on Willies legacy but I am sure he owes us more than all that comes from that source but for my own part I would never claim for it a legacy unless destined to some trustees to administer to the legatee has only one destiny and that is the legatee who is the heir James Elliot would be at any time exposed to any Tom Scott of a fellow who is in the country and to this there is no defence.

My hand is very stiff, I must pull in.

Yours very truly,
Adam Smith

Excuse bad writing

27. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw and Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
13 July 1874

My dear John,

Your letter came duly to hand by last mail and we were very glad to hear that you were all well when the mail left. I am glad to report all well here. Grace and I are both well and I was in Melbourne on Saturday and found Adam right well. Willi was out of town and Tom and Louisa also away so I did not see any of them, but they are all well. Willi was at some coursing match and Tom and his spouse at his father-in-laws. I went down principally to consult Adam about the offer for my property and to see his mind upon the matter and we both came to the conclusion that we should accept the offer. I think such an advantageous one ought to be secured when one can get it and one can still be a laird in Darnick all the same. I think if my father had been alive he would have jumped at the offer. I suppose he will put sufficient improvements on it

in the way of buildings to make the feu saleable at a handsome price and think he ought to be found something in that way. You can therefore go on with free authority to close with him.

Fancy a house built with concrete walls.[114] I am more in favour of brick but have been so long out of the trade that I belong to the old school now.

I am sorry to hear you talk of sending Jim Turnbull out here again. I think you are utterly wrong. The restraints of society at home have some effect upon fellows like him, here they are utterly powerless. He would go to the dogs hand over hand. I think he was in Australia and New Zealand for about 10 years I believe and I know I am not far wrong when I say he never did one honest day's work in all these years and he never will. Keep him at home John and try and reform him there, but don't send him out here anymore to go quick to destruction.

We are now in very cold and wintry weather and very dull trade too I am sorry to say. We had a call of Willi Weatherley last week. He seems to be pretty well, but is often complaining now I think. I fancy a trip home if he could manage it would put him on his legs. Not that he really needs it but any man out here should have a change every few years.

I am glad to hear of the bairns welfare. What about Eliza and hers. None of you ever mention them. Are the children at school and where is she.

Now my dear John I must conclude. Grace when I left home desired to be kindly remembered to Maryon and the bairns which sentiment I entirely endorse while I remain as of yore

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

28. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
13 July 1874

Dear John,

I enclose first of exchange for one thousand pounds on power of Violet on account of annual income in the estate of my late brother John Smith of

[114] James is perhaps referring here to the Waverley Hydropathic Institution, which had recently been built on the north side of Darnick. It is thought to be the earliest mass concrete construction in Scotland.

Darnick. I was glad to hear good accounts of you all by the last mail and am happy to be able to report that we are all well here.

I wrought on account of the estate the other day a few more Collingwood gas shares at a price that returns about 6¾ per annum and is sure to continue to do so for a long time. I will likely send you a statement of accounts by the next mail to show how things stand.

Adam and James will no doubt give you any news that are going and with kind regards to all my cousins, I remain

Your affectionate cousin,
W. Smith

29. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
13 July 1874

My dear John,

I duly received your letter by last mail and was very glad to hear of the welfare of all in your neighbourhood and that my mother was pretty well. I am glad to say that we are all so as to be about in this hemisphere having seen James two days ago who reported well of his wife and Tom Smith this morning who did the same office for his spouse and youngsters. I was out at Willie's yesterday and saw his little boy and I am glad to be able to report a clean bill of health on the part of all of us which is a prime blessing. George Wilson is getting round again at St Kilda[115] after a very severe attack of rheumatic gout.

I was very glad to see from your letter that property in Darnick and its neighbourhood is looking up and that there are offers or is an offerer for our acres there. James came down on Saturday to talk the matter over and we both agreed on the subject. I shall be very glad to let my Bleachfield Park or rather the Wester Weirhill field be feued on the terms you mention or even a little less if you cannot get him to toe the scratch at £12 as I think it would be a very profitable way of disposing of it and I leave it to you to make such arrangements with the offerer as you think necessary to carry out the transaction. I see you mention that there are 3¾ acress [*sic*] inside of the plantation fence and if I recollect right there is an acre more of plantation and Sutherlands house and garden or say 4¾ acres in all. If he would give £12 per

115 A fashionable seaside resort, *c.*6 km south east of Melbourne.

acre for the field the figures would therefore be exclusive of ¼ acre which I suppose Sutherland's garden and house would occupy

4½ acres at £12-0-0, £54 per annum

or with Sutherlands house and garden

4¾ acres at £12-0, £57

Such securities I suppose would be saleable at home as well as here and if he puts enough of buildings on it to guarantee the yearly feu I suppose from 22 to 25 years of purchase would represent the value of the property.

As regards Sutherlands house I used to think that it was worth from £200 to £250 but as it occupies a long stretch of frontage to the road I suppose it would interfere with the views of an individual who wanted to feu the whole of the field and if so I do not see how it could remain a separate property but if Creech means business I do not think I would let the house stand in the way as it would be a fine price for the property even to let the house and all go, but yet it is worth something and it might do no harm to try if he would give something for the house over and above the £12 per acre for the field. Such are my ideas about the Weirhill field and I leave it in your hands to do the best you can with. I need not tell you that it will suit me very well to get so much more for it than I do now. I suppose the feu charter if he does business will bind him to put sufficient value on the place.

Are such securities saleable at home? Here they are in great demand for trust funds. I do not mean feu duties for we have no such land tenure here but others of a similar kind. I shall be glad to hear that you make a deal with him. I am sorry to hear that Robert Turnbull is not paying up James' money as he really has no excuse since it is destined under his fathers settlement and do not understand him unless it is that he is absolutely short of money. I hope that he will avoid the unpleasantness of having a man in possession or he will set peoples tongues a going.

I think you should let James remain in St Boswell's[116] which seems to my recollection the best place in the world for him. Now if you at home know the career of such fellows out here when they get a certain length, they become bar loafers forge cheques or steal something and get into the hands of the police get into gaol or graduate to a penal establishment. I do not mean to say that Jim would do so but many do and this is the worst place in the world to send him or any unsteady man to as they literally get justice without mercy. Jim never worked all the time he was here and is not likely to begin now. I think he should stay at home and we have been disgraced quite enough with these fellows. If you do not like him quite so near you board him at Mosspaul or the

116 A village and parish in Roxburghshire.

Doocote or Deanburnhaugh or some place in the immediate neighbourhood of Robert. Old Teviothead Schoolhouse would do very well.[117] We do not stand on stepping stones out here and would at once carry the war into his brother Robert's camp instead of our own.

I heard from Gideon lately he is stock riding on a station up at St Arnaud about 200 miles from here. He has been teetotal since he left Melbourne he says.

It goes straight to my heart to hear the commendation you give my little Jock and I have no doubt at all that the little man could see a likeness between us, he was devoted to me and never left me when I was in the house till he had to go to bed and many a flying visit he made to the yard to me on his own account. I do like to hear good accounts of them all.

I note that part of your letter referring to justification by faith alone and do not care to enter into the subject very much as in answering Jane's letter I was quite misunderstood by her and am sorry for it. Did she tell you to poke me up? I would not like to enter into a discussion of such a subject by letter but hope I may live to see you all before it is very long. You home people should be merciful.

I must now pull up and with much love to all of your family, Agnes and yourself,

I am, my dear John,
Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

30. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Sawmills
Melbourne East
27 July 1874

Please pay to Mr William Smith or his order or pay the same on his account to the Trustees of the late John Smith of Darnlee the sum of Two Hundred and Eighty Pounds sixteen shillings sterling from the proceeds of the sale or the feuing of my Weirhill field.

Adam Smith

---

117 All the places suggested by Adam lie in Roxburghshire but at some distance south of Melrose.

31. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
10 August 1874

Dear John,

Enclosed you will find account current balances the executors of the late John Smith and C and J Smith from 1st July 1873 to 1st August 1874, showing a balance of £2025.17.10 at the Executors credit which I propose to invest as opportunity occurs. You will of course observe that the bulk of it has come in lately.

I enclose an order of Mr. Adam Smith in my favour which when paid, please put to the credit of the Trust estate as a remittance and advise me about it. The amount is £280.16/. I think the Trust properties and investments are just about the same value as at first.

I am very sorry to hear that your mother is so very unwell and hope that next mail will bring better accounts of her health. Glad to hear good accounts of all the rest and to be able to give a similar report from Melbourne.

With kind regards, I remain,
Your affectionate cousin,
W. Smith

32. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw and Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
10 August 1874

My dear John,

I was very sorry to hear by your last letter such a poor account of our dear mother's health and had indeed small heart to write to her this mail but her vital powers have been great and though it looked all against her recovery should not be surprised to hear by next mail that she had got over it. Though she is now in the state at which life is not desirable yet her very dust is dear to us and we cannot think calmly of losing such a gem. The recollection of the time I spent with her at home when I was last with you I look back upon as about the brightest spot in my life and I envy the Christian faith with which she could look upon and take hold of what are to me ever and ever greater

mysteries. I am going to buy myself a mother's chatecism [*sic*] one of remembrance of her and see and try what I can do to track back onto the old scent again.

I must confess I have had a rude shock with modern Christianity lately and have given up my secretaryship of St Andrew's Kirk in consequence. The principal of the Scotch College in connection with our church Mr McCoy[118] had been misbehaving himself (so his enemies say and I believe it is true) and his principal assistant had got an appointment as principal of a college in a distant part of the colony and as it was then the midwinter holidays and he would be off in a few days Mr Wanliss one of the trustees of the Church College grounds and no friend of McCoy's set about to accomplish his resignation on the ground at first that he and the other Trustees would not go on with a new college building which was about to be built unless they had carte blanche to deal with McCoy. Some foolish affair gave him the opportunity he wanted to get McCoy in his power and then a special meeting of the committee and session of the Kirk was called for the Monday to deal with College business Wanliss got hold of McCoy on the Saturday and under false pretences [*sic*] got him to constate himself a weekly servant at the will of the Trustees (McCoy was only answerable to the courts of the church before) and having got him to do that called a hole and corner meeting of the Trustees and College Committee on the Saturday evening the same day he made the other arrangement and sent for McCoy again and there and then with a lawyer at his (Wanliss) elbow to have everything done in order made him sign his own discharge from the College and hand over the keys to Wanliss. I felt as any honest man would do, very angry at such treatment to any man and at the meeting of committee on Monday night denounced the whole affair as the most notorious wrong that I ever knew of in my life and concluded by proposing a vote of censure upon the Trustees for the way they had gone about to accomplish the resignation of McCoy. Such is the influence of the press [*interlined*: Wanliss being proprietor of the "Star"] that they were all frightened of Wanliss and I could find no seconder of my motion but the committee and I regret to have to say is that the minister was in the chair and the session well represented that they condoned the action of the trustees by some motion equivalent to approval of what they had done. As I could not act in that way or in any way be a party to such harsh measures I resolved to have nothing more to do with the management of affairs and accordingly at the next meeting of the Committee I sent in my resignation which they have not yet accepted but will have to as I will never act again in any capacity connected with the management of a church. In the meantime it turned out as bad as bad could be for poor McCoy on the following Thursday morning committed suicide by cutting his throat a

[118] Professor Robert O. McCoy had been the principal of Ballarat College. He committed suicide on 9 July 1874 after being forced to resign by the college trustees.

sorry ending for any man but especially a gentleman and a scholar leaving behind him a wife and six children. The widow too is about as great a moral wreck as ever was I believe and was the cause of all the man's errors. I told the session and committee and chairman after their sustaining the action of the trustees that if one half of what I had heard about Mrs McCoy was true then I did not believe there was one member of the meeting if [*illegible word*] as he had been would have come out of it better if as well as McCoy and that things had come to a poor pass if such treatment was all a man could get from a church court.

I feel disgusted with the whole affair and when the minister and session clerk waited on me about ten days ago to get me to continue my duties as secretary I firmly declined. They said they would see me again before the next meeting but I hardly think so for they had no encouragement. Yesterday I think Henderson cut out his morning sermon pretty well on my account pointing out what he considered my duty but as he loves arguing ex Cathedra[119] I had no power of reply but am willing to argue it out with him at any time on equal terms.

And now I dare say you are tired of this but it has filled up a big measure of my life this last month and as it is a period in a mans history I thought I would tell you of it – it gives one a rude shock at 43 years.

And now how are you all and all the bairns and that last but not least. We have had glorious winter weather. I never knew it so fine. How is Bob Turnbull shaping. I wrote Mitchell today sending home Afflecks discharge and with kind love to you all, I am, my dear John,

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

33. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
11 August 1874

My dear John,

Thanks for your last letter which I duly received and carefully noted its contents and first as to the Bleachfield Park. By last mail I wrote to you all that I thought about it viz. giving you my thoughts on the subject and leaving you as I thought

[119] Literally, 'from the chair'. James appears to be suggesting that the Reverend Henderson used his position as minister to lend an unchallengeable authority to his pronouncements.

perfectly free to act in the matter. I see by this last letter that you suggest that it may be sold if it is not feued. I can assure you that I am very glad to hear of such a probability and nothing would give me so much pleasure as to turn it into money as in its present state it will never do me any good and if I had the money for it, it would suit me in many ways now.

I was very sorry to hear of the state in which your letter described my mother to be and wait with considerable apprehension the arrival of the next mail. Poor lady what a good woman she has been and how much of Christs work she has done in the world. When her time comes I do not think she will leave many as good as she is behind her. She has borne the burden and heat of the day and after her long and arduous work with my father it must have been very grateful to her to be so well taken care of herself. It is very sad indeed to see those we liked best dropping off and leaving us the oldest kind of people in connection but yet when one feels as in her case that she is only going home it does not seem to matter so much. She has lived to a good old age and must have had a constitution very nearly perfect.

I do wish I had seen her again before she departed this life but I never had the chance of doing so since I came out here. I shall set my face now to go home as soon as ever I can get my things to shape properly. If I do not and this morning it is fifteen years since I set out from Liverpool I might not live to go unless I set about it soon.

To return once more to the Bleachfield I wish if the man does not feu it that you would sell it and leave the price to yourself. It would advantage me much and I know that you know so very thoroughly the value of landed property that I am perfectly satisfied to leave it in your hands. It was necessary to make some arrangements here about business. Willie gave me the money and to secure and repay him I gave him an order on you for the amount of £280-16 from the sale of my Bleachfield property. So if you can either feu or sell it get it done and pay Willie as soon as possible as he is such a good fellow and is always ready to do anything that will further my interests.

We are getting along very well in the business here and a short time will soon show how we get along. I have worked first rate with Willie in Robert's absence.

I suppose if you put the above sum when it is available to the credit of John Smith's estate it will do quite as well or much better indeed Willie said it would be best. I have been busy lately and am so still and I must pull up now so with love to Agnes, yourself and your family,

I am dear John
Yours truly
Adam Smith

34. FROM JOHN SMITH TO WILLIAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
1 September 1874

My dear Cousin,

I ~~duly~~ did receive yours of the 13th July last enclosing first of exchange for one thousand pounds in favor of Violet, on account of the annual income on the estate of the late John Smith Darnlee. ~~I have forwarded it to her at Perth (where she is at present) for her indorsation and on return will lodge it with the Royal Bank for negotiation in course~~ and which I will ~~be~~ lodge with the Royal Bank for negotiation. The gas shares seem to be a very good investment.

I trust Robert and his wife have a good passage and without the disabilities of their journey hither. He had a very narrow squeak to complete the feuing transaction for you before going and wrought manfully about it. Mr Creich does not seem to have broken ground yet on the Under Broadmeadow. I suppose he will be trying his hand with the Hydropathic Company for a bonus on his Blindwell ~~portion of~~ field.[120] I fear he has got too much tow in his rock[121] meanwhile to go heartily into Adam and James' field as he at first contemplated. We will see how he shapes with yours before we can with any advantage press them upon him. I should like very much to see the building mania go ahead at the Broadmeadow. He would not offer any more for my field than he gives for yours and Robert and I both considered that with the road frontage it has considerably more valuable.

I am glad to hear good accounts of you all from Adam and James. We are all well here. With kindest regards in which Agnes unites I am

Your affectionate cousin
John Smith

35. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballarat
6 September 1874

My dear John,

I was very much grieved on receipt of your letters from home to hear of the death of our dear old mother. It was not unexpected as your previous letter

120 Blindwell field lay to the immediate east of the Waverley Hydropathic, Darnick.

121 Literally, 'too much flax in his distaff', but with the meaning that he was too busy with other concerns to turn his attention to the matter.

gave us full warning of what we might expect. But still come when it will it is a very shocking event even in the case of one who like her had gone far beyond their threescore and ten years alloted [*sic*] to man. We John stand now in life's outer circle all of our father and mother being gone before. Surely our mother's had a glorious life and death. I wish you who knew her so well would write a memorial of it. I am sure it would be interesting to us and also to the rising generations. It would make a grand story. Her early struggles at Hassendean,[122] the burden of the care of the whole army of little ones there upon her after her father's death, her married life when she was the very right hand of our father in all his afflictions and her widow's life when in the midst of her family with an unbroken line in it she enjoyed the evening of her life and went to her grave full of years and mourned alike by her family and acquaintances. Surely such a life as that is worth chronicling the events of and I am sure it would be a pleasure to us all and I am sure you could do it well and as you have the pen of a ready writer with the help of the sisterhood you could confer a boon upon us all. I hope you will take the hint.

I am much concerned now about the breaking up of the old home. It must be very hard for poor Jane. What is she going to do now? I suppose you will tell us something of the purposes by next mail. She is a kindly soul and will miss our mother very much. Do you know that Violet and I were born in the old house and I don't like to think of it without a Smith in it.

I hope the quiet of Aberlady[123] gave relief and rest to all after the watching and anxiety of our mothers sick room and her death. There is something grand about the old sea after all. There is no change in that ever changing ocean. "Time writes no wrinkles on thy azure brow as when creation dawned thou rollest now" [124] well wrote the poet and I do not know anywhere to get such relief from care and trouble as at the sea side or on board ship for a while. I have promised myself and Grace a day or two at I[?] when I can get away but have not been able to accomplish it for the past year and a half.

Have you kept up constant correspondence with Eliza and where is she living and what is she doing and how is she getting on. I never fail to ask Adam about her but he is rather reticent about her. I can only learn from him that she is living in the neighbourhood or suburbs of London. You will hear doubtless from those on the spot of the arrival of a son and heir to Charles Mills – Robert Smith we expect in the end of September with his wife and bairn he has had a pretty good spell at home and I was pleased to think he would be able to represent the Australians at our mothers funeral.

---

122 A village in the parish of Minto, Roxburghshire.

123 A coastal village in East Lothian.

124 A slightly misremembered quotation from Lord Byron's 'Childe Harold's Pilgrimage' (1812-1818), Canto IV.

We are now in the beginning of Spring the willows are just getting green and the almond trees white with blossom. The spring flowers are in all their glory. We have had an exceedingly fine winter and lots of hard frost the thermometer having registered some days 25°-26° of Farenheit [*sic*] or 6 centigrade of degrees frost and we had quite ¼ an inch of ice. Today has been very stormy and cold with hail and sleet. At church in the morning you would have thought some of the gales would have blown the roof of [*sic*]. Our minister was up country inducting an old Ballaarat minister Mr Smeaton into his new charge at Mayboro. I hope they had better weather there than here or Smeaton would have a wintry reception. We had the man from Collingwood who gave us a capital sermon.

I have not seen Adam since last month but he is alright. He had been laid up for a day or two but is better again. Grace desires to join me in kind love to Nat and yourself and kisses to the bairns all round from their aunties. And I am,

My dear John
Your affectionate brother
James Smith

36. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
8 September 1874

My dear John,

It now becomes my duty to write to you as head of the house on the occasion of my mothers death an event which although not unprepared to hear cut us up here a good deal. I am glad that we had the notice by the previous mail. I suppose the remembrance that we entertain of her will be different from those of her family who were near her when she died as when I saw her last she was a tolerably active and pushing busy woman always keeping something or another right and doing good to some one or another "beast or body" as the saying used to be in Scotland. Well the dear old Lady has come in a good old age to the end of her earthly pilgrimage and I dare say there are few who have done Christ's work more than she has in her sphere and that in no duffing fashion but loyally and bravely as one who meant to do her work and did it well and of her it may be said well and truly "she hath done what she could". The old Scottish gentlewoman with her brave heart and kind, and her ready hands may be an example in the family for a great many years yet and I am sure

no child that she had will ever see any better one to take a pattern from so that she will speak though dead and her remembrance will ever be green in their memories. I am not going to quote any texts as you can all do that as well and likely far better than I can: but one "Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord"[125] seems to me to be quite apt and generally turns up whenever I think of her.

I think she must in the latter years of her life been as happy as any one could be poor old lady among her kindred and the subject of so much care after taking care of others all her active life and with every comfort about her and people in the village on whom she could get an outlet for her benevolent feelings and continue as long as she could do anything to go on in the way she had done so long. I do not know what shape modern charity takes at home now but when I remember my mothers alms deeds first it used to consist of giving a beggar as big a nieveful of meal into his pock[126] as her fingers could span accompanied with an injunction if he was able bodied to go and get work or I think I have seen them if they came at dinner time standing supping broth from a bowl at the kitchen door. I suppose her charities would be varied as her mind was inventive and times will have advanced in Scotland from the oat meal period.

Well my dear John we may say we have lost the best mother that any family ever had and I hope by God's grace we will all be led to the same place that she has gone and by the same way. I regret very much that I did not see her a year or two ago and I think I shall always regret it but I am very glad that she saw and liked my wife and children that is one comfort to me when I think of it.

We are all well here I think. I heard from James lately and have seen the balance of the kindred not so long ago so that we are all right in that way. Business is quiet. We may look for Robert and his wife shortly I think as they have been on the sea now for a month.

I am glad to hear good accounts of you all at home by the last mail. I wrote to you about the Bleachfield Park I think fully last mail and shall be glad if you can dispose of it for me. I see Robert has concluded a bargain with a man for Willie's.

I must pull up my dear John, and with love to all at home, I am

your affectionate brother
Adam Smith

---

125 Revelation 14:13.

126 Scots for 'a fistful of grain in his pouch/bag'.

37. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
7 October 1874

My dear John,

I duly received your letter by the last mail and was very pleased to see by it (Jane excepted) that you were all well. I am sorry to hear such poor accounts of her health and yet it is only natural to expect that after her long spell of attendance and watching my mother [*interlined*: she should be ill]. I hope however that there are no symptoms that show anything to be wrong with her constitution and that rest and care and best of all change of scene will set her up again and I am sure that London is the very place to do it. I feel very sorry now that I did not see my mother before she died and cannot get it out of my head and I have felt very lonely ever since her death somehow or other. It always was a comfort to me, as well as to James to know that she would never forget us in her prayers and the effective fervent prayer of one that is righteous availeth much and though one can have many brothers and sisters he can only have one mother. Everything in connection with her departure prevents one from mourning much for the good old saint but I find it impossible curiously enough to prevent myself from fretting.

I see by your letter that there is £45 to my credit from I suppose the Weirhill field and house and I am very glad that you were going to tell Eliza of it. I see by the letters that Willie's letter not mine reached home and she would be awkwardly situated as she cannot have much before her so if you will be good enough I shall be much obliged if you will send it to her it will let her fetch up her leeway and get better tuition for the children.

She may have written to you and got some but if it is to the good when this arrives please to let her have it all. I did not remember anything about the stock but if there is anything coming to me from that source you cannot do better than let it go the same road. The old woman will shepherd it and tell it out as far as it will go.

I shall be very glad that you pay over my rents to Jane and Agnes but I should like far better if you could sell the field and let me pay off my liabilities. I should like that best of all and I hope you will be able to do it. Robert tells me that John Freer who has money of his own, confided to him that he was wanting to buy that field a fact that he thinks you do not know but which Freer told him so that you could see his views of the matter. Willie is greatly pleased at the disposal by feuing of his two fields and well he may be Robert managed that very well for him.

Robert and his wife arrived by the S.S. Durham[127] after a 54 days passage and they seem to have enjoyed themselves very much on the voyage and all through the trip. They are staying in the Parade at present and will do until they get a house of which suitable ones are not to be picked up every day. The bairnie is a very nice little child and Mrs Robert is a very agreeable inmate of the house.

They showed me your portrait in their album as also Agnes's and Jane's. I have one of Violet of the same style which is the cabinet size of face on the ordinary sized board. I could recognise Jane after a while but I cannot recognise either your face or Agnes'. I have got you both in my mind's eye as you were when I left Scotland and cannot realise either of you after many looks. I wish you would let me have one of each of you that I may keep up the acquaintance. I have got a nice album to put them in sent by Violet per R Smith. I will send you one the next time I get one taken.

I am, my dear John,
your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

38. FROM JOHN SMITH TO WILLIAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
29 October 1874

My dear Cousin,

I duly received yours of the 10th August last with account current between the executors of the late John Smith & C & J Smith from 1st July 1873 to 1st August 1874 and which is [*interlined*: very] satisfactory.

~~Also enclosing~~ [*interlined*: I also received per Jane enclosure of] an order by Adam Smith for £ 280-16 in your favor, to be paid from proceeds of the sale or feuing of his Wierhill field. This I will apply as you direct as soon as I have realised the whole or part of the field. I have a modified offer to feu from the man who has feued from you, but in case he comes up to the mark I am prepared to offer it to the public either in whole or in ~~feu~~ separate feus and I believe it will very soon be taken up. When he wrote to me, he said he proposed breaking ground in yours about Martinmas. I would live very much to see him begin, as I think it would no doubt give an impetus to the building of villas about here.

---

127 A steamship operated by Money Wigram & Sons for the passenger trade between Australia and Britain.

I am glad to say we are all well here. I saw your mother and sisters on Tuesday. Dr Smith and I took tea with them and they are well, tho Elizabeth complains of not having very good nights sometimes. With kind regards in which Agnes unites, I am

Your affectionate cousin,
John Smith

39. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
2 November 1874

My dear John,

Many thanks to you for your last letter enclosing accounts of my property for some time back which is a very lucid document although it must have been difficult to keep with so many rates and burthens on it. I am glad to hear that you are all well at Darnick and that Jane is a good deal better. I had a letter from her from London in which she gives an improving report of herself, and I shall be glad to hear by next mail that her recovery still goes on.

I am glad to see that you have at last got a settlement or at all events the near prospect of one with Robert Turnbull who seems like the Kyloes[128] of old in Andrew Drummond's close[129] to have required his tail very considerably twisted before he would toe the scratch. I did not remember to speak to James the last time I saw him about the purchase of an annuity for James T with the money, but it has my hearty concurrence and if you hear the same from him you can consider it has our concurrence. I do not see anything so likely for him poor fellow.

I have not been quite well lately but am better now. Again the sudden heat was rather too much for me. Now it is cool again. George Mills is staying with his brother Charles and seems to be passing through the usual first stage of new comers to the colony a great desire to get something to do which I suppose he will bye and bye. Robert and his wife are in the Parade still, not having yet met with a house according to their notions and they are with the baby very well.

---

128 A breed of cattle, now better known as Highland Cows.

129 Scots for farmyard.

Tom and his family have gone to live at Essendon[130] about four miles out where they are in close proximity to Mrs Tom's father and mother. I met George Meson for the first time the other day who told me that he had been at your house at Leaderfoot and seen you very lately. My friend George Wilson is now getting better after a six months illness of rheumatic gout and [the] poor fellow has come out of it quite an old man. I had a letter from Gavin by this mail which I shall answer by next mail. He seems to be the same lighthearted fellow he used to be of old and I was very glad to have a scratch from him again. I also heard from Thomas Boston in reply to my letter to him after his brother's death.[131]

James shewed one of his dray horses at the Ballaarat Agricultural Society's show and got the 2nd prize for it.[132] The first prize was taken by one that we sold a few years ago. I am very much obliged to you my dear brother for forwarding the money you had in hand to my wife as I am sure it will come in very handy for her and I am glad she has gone away to the north as a change of air is better than all the doctors in the country. I hope she will see her way to settle down in your neighbourhood, but of course [I] am not a judge of what is best at this distance. I hope you will be able to sell my field well.

I have nothing new to communicate but with much love to Agnes and you and to all your children, I am my dear John,

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

40. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
2 December 1874

My dear John,

Yours of the 1st October is to hand for which thanks and I am glad to hear that you are all well in Scotland also that James Turnbull's business with his brother has been concluded. I suppose if ever I go home I need not leave a lock of my hair at Falnash nor James either. It is very gratifying however to know that you gave him every opportunity to settle it amicably and he must be a foolish man

130 A settlement *c.*8 km north west of Melbourne.

131 Thomas Boston held the tenancy of Balmuick, a farm in the parish of Monzievaird and Strowan, Perthshire. He was the brother of the aforementioned John Boston.

132 The 16th annual show of the Ballarat Agricultural and Pastoral Society had been held on 29-30 October 1874.

not to do it. In Australia he would have just got justice without mercy. I spoke to James when he was down and he is quite willing that an annuity should be purchased with the money it seems to both of us to be the best way of investing the not very liberal provision for the poor fellow. So we give our sanction with many thanks for all the trouble you have been at and hope you will carry it through.

I am very pleased that my belongings are going to your neighbourhood and hope that you will give them a look and see how they are going on. James and his wife are well and were down at the races and enjoyed themselves. Seemingly Mrs James is getting very stout.

We have got our new church opened, it was last Sunday and went off very well and is the finest church in Melbourne and also very large and roomy and comfortable and is besides the Church of Scotland church as contradistinguished from the Free represented by Cairns and we shall now please God have good times there and hear the word from staunch Church of Scotland men.[133]

I must catch the post with this. I hope you are going to be able to sell the Weirhill Park. Kind regards to Agnes and to all your bairns who I hope will all soon get acquainted with little Jock and the rest of mine.

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

41. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballarat
1 February 1875

My dear John,

Thanks for your long and kind letter duly received to hand and which I will not have time to reply to this mail but as you wanted to know my ideas about Jim Turnbull's affairs I may not letter another mail go without say[ing] that I am entirely of opinion that you can do nothing so good with his money as purchase an annuity for him. Adam and I were of that opinion at the time and if he did not express it as my view of the matter it must have been that he forgot or thought that I would be writing myself.

I was very sorry to hear of the untimely end of Robert Turnbull poor fellow. His was a very sad death. I suppose Lena will be with her son the

133 The Scots' Church in Collins Street, Melbourne, had been opened on 29 November 1874. Built in the Neo-Gothic style, it had fixed seating for just under a thousand worshippers.

possessor of [?Merriland]. It was a lucky thing for us that you got a settlement with him about Jim's legacy before he died.

When I last wrote I think we were at Queen's Cliffe whither I had gone to try to effect a cure of a bad cold and sore throat with which I had been troubled for some time. I was so far fortunate in getting rid of the cold in in my throat but it has stuck to me in the shape of catarrh of a violent character ever since and is most annoying seeing that I cannot breathe through my nose at all. I hope soon to be rid of it as it is most annoying and one way and another I have had something to trouble me all the Summer. I had made up my mind to have a fortnight's spell over in Tasmania but like many another ploy of the sort I have planned when the time came it had to be put off till a more convenient season. Whether that more convenient season will ever come or not I don't know. I am pretty well in the condition so aptly described by the poet Cowper: 'Hackneyed in business, wearied at the oar, which thousands, once fast chained to, quit no more'.[134]

Trade has been very slack lately. I hope it will improve soon. So far the extension of the Railways up country has not done us much good. It has a tendency to centralise all in Melbourne I think.

Grace had a quinsied throat after we came back from Queenscliff but it is now better. Whatever of benefit I had there she had the reverse.

I am glad to hear good accounts of the health of all the bairns. Grace desires to join me in kind love to Agnes and yourself and she sends kisses to all the bairns and I am, my dear John

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

42. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
22 February 1875

My dear John,

Many thanks to you for your long letter which reached me by last mail and by which I was glad to hear of the welfare of the headquarters contingent. It is a pity however for poor Robert Turnbull to have made such a poor finish of it. Out in the colonies doctors generally insist on men who drink heavily changing their grog every day by which means I believe they swing it out a great deal

[134] A quotation from 'Retirement' (1781) by William Cowper.

longer. They ring the changes on brandy whisky rum and gin and I believe it has not the direful effect which is produced by steadily sucking in one potent liquor. Poor Jim seems to be pretty much the old individual and to take a blow out when he can get it. I am not surprised that he induced Mitchell to give him some money for he has very adroit ways and could get to windward of most people unless they were duly put on their guard.

I am very glad that you and not I will have to pay out his money for his behoof as I see you mean to keep him on the teetotal whereas I do believe I would occasionally give him a bottle of gin on the principle of its being a poor heart that never rejoices and to prevent him sinning his mercies by murmuring and repining at the want of it. However that which is best is best. It is very fortunate that James's business with Robert was settled before Robert's death. Lena will be very well off in Falnash which according to traditionary usage I suppose she will continue to farm.[135]

James Elliot seems to be a very decent fellow to 'stand Sam'[136] as the saying goes to so many young men and lend them a helping hand. I have not seen Mr Hall yet but doubtless he will turn up one of these days although by the way I do not know what ship he is coming by as you do not mention it. When you were in the midst of frost and snow we had very hot weather. In January we had five days that astonished most of people with an intensely hot wind that blew through every corner of every house and warmed everything. The thermometer out of doors was as much as 145° in some of the streets. In our office it was 112° rising to that by about 2 o'clock from about 96° or 98° the lowest it reached during the night. To sleep was impossible and the quantities of people that crowded the bars in the town for iced drinks beat everything. You were forced to drink something and glad were we all when the wind changed and blew a shorter from the south. It took a day or two to cool down the houses and on the evening of the second day I went off to bed at eight and had a round of the clock to fetch up my leeway. Victoria is rather singular in respect of the hot winds. They have not got them nearly so bad at Sydney and there seems to be some undefined local influences that make it occasionally so hot here. Jane can tell you what an ordinary hot wind is an extraordinary one can scarcely be described but it doubles one up so that to work is a serious thing and outdoor work is not attempted. We have had a few hot days since but not all together but even yesterday was too hot to go about but it changed in the evening.

My wife stands heat very ill and I am sure if she had been here I would have had to hire a cellar for her. I am very much obliged to you for your many kindnesses to Eliza and the bairns. Every letter I get she tells me how kind

---

135 In Scots Law, on the death of a tenant farmer, the lease descended to his heir. If he was married and was either without children or they were still minors, this was usually his widow.

136 To treat somebody to something, usually a drink.

Agnes and you are to her and them and especially do I appreciate the kindly mention I get of them in your letters and my sisters. It does a fellow good to hear of them. In writing to Betsy I told her I would bring Jock up a true democrat it will be a while before he can receive the principles poor little fellow and he has a good deal to learn besides that.

I am much obliged to you for handing over to my wife £31-13-2 the sum coming to me for my share in the farm stock of my late father left undivided at his death and her receipt for the same shall be a discharge in full and binding on me. As regards the Bleachfield Park I received the plan you kindly sent me and have looked it over. If I were a younger man or a richer I should like very well to work out the plan and let it out for feuing. But it will not suit me at my time of life and I would like very much to have it sold now as I could do much better with the money out here and will be very much obliged if you will do what you can for me. I would like it sold outright without letting a single feu. The price I leave to yourself as I am sure no one knows better than you do and I shall be satisfied with what you get for it. But we move a good deal quicker out here than is the good old fashion back at home and a little five acre allotment like that would go through half a dozen hands in as many months and no one think anything of it so I hope you will be able to get a customer for it.

Robert and his wife have now moved out to their house in Grey Street and I am bird alone again. They have a very nice house and have been very busy furnishing it of late. The furniture is all very handsome and generally the place has as a book would describe it an air of mingled elegance and comfort. Mrs Robert is very amiable and very pleasant and I liked very well to have her as an inmate of the house. We had occasionally in the evenings a three handed game at cribbage which was our little dissipation but which I expect you and Agnes do not indulge in.

I must pull up. I stood the hot weather well and was nothing the worse for it but of course I had to be very cautious. I am glad to hear of the welfare of all your family. Send me your portrait if you have one to spare and I will send you mine if I ever get another one taken but I am getting rather past the age for that sort of thing.

Love to all my sisters and brothers in law when you see them and with much love to yourself,

I am, my dear John,
Your affectionate brother
Adam Smith

43. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
18 April 1875

My dear John,

Yours of the 18th April came duly to hand and I am glad to hear of the general welfare of all at headquarters. Mr George Hall of Downham[137] came out in the True Briton[138] he came out on Monday last when I was at old Mr Macpherson's funeral. I rather think he came up straight from the ship and he brought some traps with him apparently meaning to stay. He asked the girl for his dinner and remained till I came. Custom has taught me how to get rid of these kinds of fellows so I very soon got him out of the house in of course quite a gentlemanly way and he made off for St Kilda. I saw James since who will be on his guard with him.

James has returned from his New Zealand trip somewhat better and he has since he came back. I think that he will soon be alright again. His wife who went to take care of him was as I told her she would be very sick. James turned up like a Trojan to every meal on board. Why do you not take a trip across to America and see the states. James did the whole distance in twenty two days. America is about the same distance as New Zealand is from Melbourne six days sail or thereby and the fares will be cheaper.

About the Weirhill field I am very anxious to get it turned into money but I would not sacrifice the field. I feel quite satisfied that you will give it your attention and take the matter easy. James gets a first class price for his two and I wish I could get mine as well sold. I saw the advertisement in the Scotsman[139] and we must just have patience. I am sure I take the matter easier than I did seeing as it is such a large proportion of what my father gave me or left me rather when he died poor fellow.

Trade in Melbourne is by no means brisk at present. In New Zealand they are going ahead with their borrowed money at a great rate James tells me and are making railways in all directions. So are they here in Victoria and they opened one from Beaufort to Ararat the other day.[140] They make all the engines they want in the colony now in Ballarat and have quite a fine

---

137 Downham was a farm near Mindrum, Northumberland.

138 A sailing ship operated by Money Wigram & Sons for the Australian passenger trade. It had arrived in Melbourne on 12 April 1875.

139 The advert for Adam's field of Weirhill noted that, 'The situation overlooks the Tweed, and is extremely eligible for a Villa or Villas' (*The Scotsman*, 3 February 1875).

140 The railway line from Beaufort to Ararat was officially opened on 6 April 1875.

establishment for making them. The Phoenix Foundry Co[141] took a contract for 10 Engines this last week which will keep them busy for a while again.

We are going to be out of a clergyman shortly. Mr Stobbs goes to be placed in West Melbourne[142] and we will have to fall back on the Reverand Irving Hetherington with his 50 minutes length of a dry sermon. They are looking after one from home or at home I should say and are endeavouring to negociate with some man named Stewart who I should think would like £1000 a year pretty well but I believe they have difficulty in getting him to come. Good men seem to like to remain at home. We have a beautiful new church and it has a magnificent spire not quite finished but when it is it will be the finest building of its kind in the town and we want a good man for it.

MacPherson Robert's father in law died about a week ago. We have not heard definitely how everything is settled and you need not say anything unless you hear it from aunt John's[143] people. There is a trust made somehow and the sons get some £4000 a year all but the eldest who comes in with the girls who each get £500 a year and £10,000 I think it is when the trust is broken up. Willie's boy gets £400 per annum and £8000 when he is 21.

I must draw to a close. And with love to Agnes, I am, my dear John,

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

44. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballarat
19 April 1875

My dear John,

Your letter by last mail was duly received and many thanks to you for the handsome bargain you have made with Creigh about my fields and which I hope he will carry out. It has certainly exceeded my most sanguine expectations as to prices. What do you remember did our father value it to me in his will. I

---

141 Established in 1854 and incorporated in 1870, the Phoenix Foundry Company Ltd built steam locomotives and other industrial machinery. Adam was a member of its board of shareholders. His brother James was a director of the company.

142 Reverend John G. Stobbs, originally from Stromness, Orkney, had been at the Scots' Church in Melbourne since 1871. He took up his charge at West Melbourne Presbyterian Church, Londsdale Street, in May 1875.

143 *i.e.*, their late Uncle John's widow, Alison.

think about £200 was it not. How things have changed within a few years. What would your Broadmeadow likely fetch in the market. I hope it has risen proportionately in value.

You seem to think I have been remiss in not saying anything about my views as to buying Jim Turnbull an annuity but it arose from the fact that I did not write you in reply that month but asked you to say how entirely I agreed with the proposal. I am sure nothing better can be done with it indeed it is the only way I know of to invest it properly for him.

I hear of (not from) Gideon occasionally who is up country with Henry Scott Riddell's son and is I believe behaving very well and keeping steady.

Since I last wrote you Grace and I have been a voyage round the New Zealand ports which occupied 22 days. I had been unwell more or less all the summer and wanted a change. We were both a deal the better for it. I was renewing my acquaintance with part of it though some of it was entirely new especially the bold scenery of the west coast. It is very grand about Hokitika the dark green foreground backed by the great towering rugged range of mountains clad in eternal snow. I knew a great change in the towns of Nelson Wellington and Christchurch but the features of the country were as fresh in my mind as if I had seen them only a week ago. I found our cousin James Turnbull at Christchurch well and thriving. He still keeps in public and is member of the provincial council for Christchurch. He was exceedingly kind and prescribed for me taking a great deal of trouble about me.[144]

I am sorry to say that Grace and I had an upset in the buggy yesterday when driving.[145] I was turning and when about half way round the mare who was very fresh made a jump and threw it on the lock and we were fairly capsized. However I never lost my hold of the reins and never let her move a yard from where it happened. We had a marvellous escape with a good shaking and one or two bruises. My right shoulder and hip are stiff but wondrous well, Grace a good bit frightened and stiff but nothing more and will be all right in a day or two I hope. Tell Betsy that I have got Robert Dodds back with me again. His mother will be glad to hear it. With kind love in which Grace joins to Nat and yourself I am my dear John

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

---

144 A former ship's surgeon, Dr James S. Turnbull ran a pharmacy in Christchurch, New Zealand. He is not to be confused with their other cousin of the same name whose money they held in trust and who appears to have caused them much trouble. See the Introduction.

145 James' mishap was considered worthy of a short report in a Melbourne newspaper. See *The Argus*, 20 April 1875.

45. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
17 May 1875

My Dear John,

I duly received yours of the 17th March and am very glad to hear of the general tone of good health which prevails in the Tweed valley and secondly at the good news that you have commenced operations with my Weirhill field by feuing the two first lots to Mr Crombie for £7-10 which I consider a very good price and if John Freer still wants it as Robert Smith thinks he does he will not be objecting to the church on one point of the feu they will likely put something up that is very sightly as all churches are now and I think taking up two lots is a very advantageous thing for us as the second one is very lowlying if I remember it rightly, I think it will not be long in going now and shall be very glad when it does.

At the time the last mail left I was in bed with my old complaint and was ill for a fortnight but after that was able to get about again and I was at Echuca Maryborough Sandhurst and Castlemain[146] last week and nothing the worse of it. Mr George Hall called repeatedly when I was in bed. I think he must have been going to borrow money of me if he could get it however I did not see him. I judge that he is still in Melbourne though I have not seen him.

What does Allan Freer mean by his conduct in representing to the Hydros that this man Creech is not likely to complete his "blind well" operations and he AF advises them not to buy him out but to leave him alone and he will have to sell. Freer is agent for all the Smiths or his firm is and I believe he is only a shareholder in the Hydropathic establishment. The last time we were all together this topic formed a subject of conversation when each one expressed his indignation that Allan should act in the manner he is doing with a client of his own who has bought land from other clients of his. Why cannot he leave the Hydropaths (who are willing to buy the place) alone. It would make the man sure of completing the arrangements he has made with Willie and James (my field is out of the running now) and would perhaps keep the value of other land in the neighbourhood. Just give him a hint not to make a fool of himself and you will oblige all out here.

I must pull up. The weather last week was really very bad and so cold the wind blew through me up the country as if I had been a milsey.[147]

---

146 These are all towns in Victoria.

147 A very fine wire-cloth sieve for straining milk.

I am glad you have commenced my Weirhill field in feuing and give you many thanks for what you have done in the matter. Kind love to Agnes and your children and believe me

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

46. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
17 May 1875

Dear John,

I enclose first of Exchange for One thousand pounds in favor of Mrs Violet Smith on account of my late brother John's estate which I trust will reach you safely.

We are all well here and everything going on very much as usual but business a little quiet. Adam and James will give you all the news. And with kind regards to all our friends who I trust are well. I remain

Your affectionate Cousin,
W. Smith

47. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
14 June 1875

My dear John,

I write this time to shew that I have again got to windward. I hope of my ancient enemy my legs are better and I only have it in the fingers wrist and elbow of my right hand and much abated though it is it [*sic*] still fatigues me to write, never the less I am thankful that I am so much better. We have had rascally weather cold north winds blowing and the north winds are very peculiar you never feel the same as in a south wind the one makes you feel languid and the other brisk.

We have had a great deal of rain too with mud on the streets of certain townships that would astonish you. I saw Willie Weatherly last week he had been up on the Darling[148] for 7 weeks. Chirnside had bought a new station and given Weatherly an interest in it with his nephews.[149] Weatherly of course paying interest for money expended. I believe it cost sixty or seventy thousand pounds and Chirnside paid it cash they have put it under the hands of a manager and Weatherly is still retaining his old situation at Caranballac. These are big figures in thousands and if the price of wool keeps up Weatherly will do well.

I am very glad you have part feued my field and as I should like to pay back William Smith his money would it suit the Trustees of Violet's Estate to purchase the feu. I should like if they would let me know when you write.

I am very glad to hear good accounts of my wife and bairns. Is the callant growing anything. I see that Violet is going to Ems.[150] I fancy if she were to go and stay the winter she would be much better and come back in the summer to Scotland. At any rate she is right to move about and in foreign countries. You should urge her to take the journey to America next year when the Exhibition is open.[151] I believe it will be a sight greater than any one of them.

My hand is tired writing and so I must pull in. Give my kind love to Agnes and to all your bairns and believe me my dear John

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

48. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw & Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
8 July 1875

My dear John,

I was very sorry to hear by last mail of the death of brother in law John Elliot.[152] He was a fine fellow and will be much missed in our family circle as well as in Liddesdale. He had arrived at a good old age however and seemingly retained

148 The Darling River, the third longest in Australia, runs through New South Wales.

149 Weatherly held a one-sixth share in the 450,000-acre estate at Billilla.

150 Also known as Bad Ems, a spa town in the Rhineland-Palatinate, Germany.

151 The International Exhibition of Arts, Manufactures, and Products of the Soil and Mine (The Centennial Exhibition) was to be held in Philadelphia from May to November 1876.

152 John Elliot of Binks (1799-1875) was the husband of James' sister Mary.

all his faculties to the end. I am glad to hear he has left them all so comfortably and that his son is able and willing to conduct the business and to follow in the footsteps of his father.

I was glad to hear of the welfare of Nat and yourself and the bairns and I hope that Jane and Violet will be all the better for their trip to Ems.

Grace and I are very well just now. We have had very poor weather till within the last three days when we have had fine keen frosts before that it rained every day and all day for weeks straight out. Mrs Tom Smith was up for a week and we had only one fine day. Her son Willi was with her. He is a fine bright boy. Tom, and Willi and Robert never visit and barely speak when they meet. It makes it so awkward when we happen to be together. They had a quarrel over some matters at the time Tom left the business. I have ignored the whole affair so far as I am concerned and go to Tom's or Willie's houses indiscriminately. As for Roberts I have not got into the habit of going there never yet having had an invitation.

Adam has been bad with his hand and arm sore since I wrote last but I have not seen him since. Grace and I are going tomorrow Friday to stay with Tom at Tweedside[153] till Monday. Wont that rescussitate [*sic*] an old emotion.

I enclose you a list of debts of Jim Turnbulls bearing his signature which he contracted in a shameful manner ten years ago and would have got in to trouble about but that we promised the parties when he came to his portion to try to get for them although we would neither pay not be responsible for them beyond trying to get their respective amounts. They are all to the fore yet and all have "gone back". I think he would appeal in vain to the lot now for 5/. I have sent you the original so that Jim may see for himself and I daresay the sight of the document will recall some old memories to him.[154]

I have kept a copy of it but if you dont want it you can send me back the old document along with the draft for the money which he is justly entitled to pay. He is due John Jardine for board too but I dont know how much.[155] I wrote to him after the mail came in but have not heard from him yet. He has left Ballaarat and gone up country farming. I could not certify to his amount so will let him send it home direct and Jim can testify to the correctness or otherwise of the amount. It will lose nothing I daresay by keeping with Jardine.

As for what he owes us I think we made up our minds long ago not to make any claim against him content if only the amount was determined by sending him out of the country.

---

153 Tweedside was the estate of Thomas Smith in Essendon, Victoria.

154 This document was preserved along with the letter. See Facsimile 8.

155 John Jardine was the former proprietor of the Ancient Briton Hotel, Ballarat, and the Junction Hotel, Windermere, Victoria.

I hope you will send out that amount on the list – the last item on it £5 is for a deposit he got on some shares of Dickson & Co[156] when in their office and for which he might have been in the hands of the police in fact ought to have been I daresay.

Business is very dull but that is almost a chronic state of matters in Ballaarat just now. I hope for better times.

You will be getting the lambs ready for Boswells fair[157] I daresay if that institution has not succumbed to my old friend Alex Davison of whom I am happy to hear flourishing accounts.[158]

Grace desires to join me in kind love to Agnes and yourself and their aunty send kisses to the bairns and I am my dear John

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

49. FROM JOHN SMITH TO WILLIAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
8 July 1875

My dear Cousin,

I have to acknowledge receipt per this weeks mail of the First of Exchange for one thousand pounds in favor of Mrs Violet Smith an account of your late brother Johns estate.

I have also received for an order by my brother Adam in your favor the sum of two hundred and eighty pounds 16/ (£280.16).

This as formerly directed I have also put to the credit of the Darnlee Trust Estate as a remittance from you. Etc.

Yours etc.
John Smith

---

156 Thomas Dickson & Co. were sharebrokers in Ballarat.

157 St Boswells Fair, which still takes place each July, had been one of the main fairs in Scotland for sheep sales. By the mid-1870s, however, livestock were increasingly disposed of at auction marts, such as the one recently founded in nearby Newton.

158 Alexander Davidson was a livestock auctioneer and salesman based in Melrose. He moved his business to Newton in 1880.

50. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
9 August 1875

My dear John,

I received your letter of the 9th June by the last mail and was glad that you had seen my belongings and reported well of them. I received the photographs and am very much delighted with them. They all look strong and well and wonderfully retain their likeness to what they were when in Australia.

I am also very glad that you have sold the Bleachfield park and think that you got a very good price for it and best of all the buyer is one of the family.

Robert has however the impression that Freer & Dunn's offer would be for John Freer who he seems to think from some confidential communication was passionately fond of the field at least he supports his theory by believing it. The money if you send it out will come in very handy to me. I am sure I am very much obliged to you for selling it and still retaining Smith as the owners name of the place. Many thanks for all your kindness to me and to my wife and bairns. Well after all it is much better sold than in my hands.

About Jim Turnbulls money I have not seen James since I got your letter but I have spoken to Willie Smith our great financial man and he says he does not know of anything at the present time that would suit. We really do not want him out here and have no doubt but he is doing much better where he is than ever he would have done in Australia. I will speak to James the first time I see him.

We have had a ministerial crisis here lately the whole lot turned out on the budget schemes of service the treasurer [*sic*] and are now in the throes of the new ministerial elections which were put off some five weeks before they are returned. The ones that have gone out are respectable men the new ones are very middling in that way most of them have something or another about them. Willie Smith's brother in law John Macpherson I believe would have had overtures made to him to join them but got thrown from his horse and broke his ribs that day. He is too respectable a man for them and they wont stay long in.

It is getting near post so I must conclude. I am my dear John

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

51. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
6 September 1875

My dear John,

I duly by last mail received your last letter containing a bank draft for £750 which arrived all right and which represents the Bleachfield Park as per statement enclosed. I can assure you that I hold myself under very great obligations to you for the sale of this and all the other things you have done for me and if this is home before you send out the balance of which you talk in your letter I wish you would take a suit of clothes from it including boots and hat from top to toe just to show that I think much of what you have done. I am sure it would give me great satisfaction. We are in the habit of paying very heavily for professional services out here.

I am sorry to hear of so many old people dying about Melrose lately. It makes us that we will soon be the oldest kind of people ourselves. The Curles will have it all their own way about Melrose now. What does Erskine's son prefer has he an eye to the army I suppose Alexander Curle will be Baron Baillie and Jimmy and he will be partners in the firm.[159]

I see you date your letter from Burntisland.[160] It is a nice change and sea bathing is better than medicine. I could do with [a] change of air myself now. Melbourne is very dull at the present time so far as business goes and the timber trade particularly so. I suppose it will get up again however but it is worse than it has been for many years. There are more places of amusement open now than I ever saw before so people must have money as they are very well filled. A Branch Exhibition for the Philadelphia one was opened last week and makes really a creditable figure besides this there is the theatre the opera house St George's hall the Apollo Hall and the Town Hill [*sic*] where there are artists singing every night.[161] Melbourne is a great place for music of all kinds.

---

159 Curle & Erskine was a firm of writers in Melrose. The head partner, James Erskine, had died the previous year, leaving Alexander Curle and James Curle to manage the firm. The Curles also served on the boards of various trusts and companies, and were generally active in local affairs.

160 A town and parish in Fife, situated on the northern shore of the Firth of Forth. The town was a popular summer resort for recreation and sea-bathing.

161 The venues listed by Adam were the Olympic Theatre, Lonsdale Street, opened 1855; The Opera House, Bourke Street, 1872, or the Princess Theatre and Opera House, Spring Street, 1857; St George's Hall, Bourke Street, 1862; Apollo Hall, Bourke Street, 1872; Town Hall, Swanston Street, 1870.

About James Turnbulls money I wish for my own part that you would invest it at home. We had him here for ten years and got ourselves disgraced by him and at home his behaviour would not bring disgrace on any one but himself besides the fellow will live longer at home than he would here having there at least a roof to cover him while here he mostly slept in a boiler or a stable at which game he must have succumbed sooner or later.

I am glad to hear that my wife and bairns are well and getting on nicely. Eliza dates her last from Sunnyside Cottage is that a new place or is it uncle Tom Shiels last place of residence.

I am glad at the prospect of summer having suffered very much from the cold this winter.

Remember me to Agnes and all your children to whom kind regards. I am Dear John

Yours very truly,
Adam Smith

52. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
26 January 1876

My dear John,

I was glad to see your fist on paper once more and most auspiciously by the first mail of the new year and glad beyond measure to hear good accounts of the health of all your household and belongings. I was sorry to hear of the death of Creigh as I would have liked to complete the sale of the property on the terms you made with him. The letter you inclose seems to deal with two transactions the first mentioned of which I have no knowledge of. Had you sold him the Broadmeadow? I hope his son will be able to carry out and complete the purchase but if not I hope you will try and find out another buyer at as good a figure. I think it is a piece of ground that should readily find a purchaser.

I was not very much surprised to hear that Jane had taken another house and was going to leave the old rooftree[162] at Whitsuntide. I always thought that after our mother's death she would find it lonely all by herself there with the memory of the stirring hive it used to be in the old days when we were all

[162] Scots for the main beam of a roof. In former times, a tenant would take the beam with him or her when moving from one cottage to another. Its use here suggests that in some instances it was used as a metonym for the house itself.

swarming about it and I think she will be more comfortable in her new home at the Weirhill. I am sorry to think of the old place being in the hands of a stranger but we cannot stay the course of events. I was born under its eaves and so I think was Violet or as I like to think of her as the Don. It will as you say be a pleasant half way house for all of you and I live in hope (though I see little prospect of it now) of having a gathering there of many of us yet. Time as you well remark rolls on tho' I did not think you had been so near the end of your second lease. Well do I remember your entering on Katiesfield[163] and a pleasant place it was for all our family to go to. If you do not see your way to another good bargain you must just come out here. Select land and settle with your family in Victoria or New South Wales. There are great advantages under the existing land laws and with the youngsters growing up you could do well.

Like you I have not taken to the speccys[164] yet my eyesight still being very good. I lost a great part of the sight of my right eye about two years ago but the left is a whole team and a horse to spare as the saying goes. I hope it will long continue as good as it is. The occulist Gray in Melbourne[165] told me when I was consulting him at the time I lost the sight of that eye that there were not half a dozen men in Melbourne of my age who could read as small print as I could which was gratifying. Adam's sight is very bad. He can do nothing without glasses.

Out of respect for your optics I shall not attempt to cross the writing on the first sheet but will yawn away on a new one. You may think this is a delicate hint for you to do likewise but such is not the case though I do confess that I like them as well now when only once written upon.

I have sent by this mail a photograph of myself to Natin which as you are together at Leaderfoot will do for both. I put myself along with you as her natural guardian seeing she has no man body but ourselves to look to her and as I cannot be with her in propria persona have sent as a substitute my likeness so that she may put it in among her lares and penates[166] if she thinks it worth a place there.

I am glad to say we are both well and I had a present of a grand pair of slippers from Grace two days ago on my birthday worked all by herself beautiful bead work grounded with red. They are stunners. I get a pair every birthday. Each new pair being better than the previous one. I am glad to say business has been pretty good since the beginning of the year and I hope it will continue.

---

163 *i.e.*, Kittysfield, John's first farm, and now worked jointly by him with Leaderfoot.

164 Spectacles.

165 Dr Andrew S. Gray. He was a specialist in ophthalmic and aural surgery and was co-founder of the Victorian Eye and Ear Hospital, Melbourne.

166 *Lares* and *penates* were the guardian deities of Ancient Rome, most often associated with the home. Here, James is likening the family portraits displayed at Leaderfoot to the effigies that Roman householders kept of these deities.

I think mining is looking up here and I hope it will for there is not a nicer town in the British dominion to my mind than Ballaarat and I hope it will have a return to prosperity. It has been very long under a cloud. I have not been in Melbourne since last mail left and have not seen Adam but I believe he is very well. Eliza seems to have made one of her sudden exits from Darnick. Could not she take the house when Jane leaves. That would be a grand place for her. The doctor would let her have it cheap. I was surprised to see the announcement of the marriages of her sister Joannah in the Argus about a fortnight ago to a fellow called Glascott.[167] We know nothing of him but fancy he must be a "cockatoo" that is a small farmer. We have had a backward summer but have now glorious weather and can sit out of doors till bed-time with impunity the hoight of weather as an Irishman expressed himself to me today. Our gooseberries are now fine ripe but a month later we have a grand shew for grapes and mulberries.

I don't think I will write to Mary or Violet this mail but tell them I have sent them as well as Nat my photos. And now my dear fellow I must wind up and with kind love to Agnes and yourself and the bairns I am my dear John as of yore

Your very affectionate brother,
James Smith

53. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
24 February 1876

My dear John,

I duly received your letter with enclosure of £295 on Monday the 21st instant for which many thanks. I was very glad to see what you call a "material guarantee against loss" and I hope that Criegh will do well out of the transaction. How property has increased in value during the last twenty years. I hope he will just be able to complete the transaction at the end of the term and do well himself.

I wrote to Adam on receipt of your letter asking him to acknowledge receipt to you of Jim Turnbull's money. He told me some time ago that he had written to Mitchell and acknowledged receipt. He being at headquarters for

[167] Joanna Cameron had married William Glascott at the Scots' Church in Melbourne on 12 January 1876.

investment on receipt of draft I forwarded it on to him. Willie Smith and him were to invest but what was done with it I do not know. Debentures most likely.

We were sorry to hear by this mail of the death of Grace's mother at the ripe age of 80 years. She died the day before Xmas as fine an old woman as I ever met and with a great deal more individuality of character than falls to the lot of most of us. Like our own mother the wheels had fairly run down with her and after only about two days illness she died having well fulfilled her mission. She had many a grief poor body seeing four of her sons and one daughter in law cut off in the prime of their days but had a heart inside her jacket that rose superior to all trials and though well grounded and firm in faith she had yet another sheet anchor in my idea which will serve her in good stead when "the small and great stand before God and when the books are opened" and when "death and hell give up the dead which are in them" and "every one is judged according to their works"[168] though I believe she would repudiate any such idea as works herself. I fear the blow will fall heavy on her husband. Poor fellow he will miss her much and in all probability will not be very long after her. He is in his 85th year and I daresay now "the grasshopper will be a burden".[169] They had been married I think over 50 years when Mrs Horsburgh died.

I was delighted to have a letter from Mary last mail also one from Violet to which I did not have time to reply this mail but hope to do so next as also to William Laidlaw from whom I have not heard from [for] years till the other day. The mail closes a day sooner than advertised of which we only had notice this morning so I must close too and with kind love to Nat the bairns and yourself in which Grace joins. I am dear John

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

54. FROM C. AND J. SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
22 March 1876

Dear Sir,

By desire of Mr William Smith we herewith hand you the enclosed draft for £1000 from the estate of the late J Smith for behoof of Mrs Violet Smith, the receipt of which please to acknowledge.

168 Paraphrasing Revelation 20:12-13.

169 Paraphrasing Ecclesiastes 12:5, with the meaning that even the lightest of burdens will be difficult to bear for a man of his age.

Mr William Smith has bid us say that "being newly returned from Tasmania he has not been able to make out a statement to accompany the draft but this he hopes shortly to find time to do". The draft is for Mrs Violet Smith and is payable at the London Joint Stock Bank at sixty days sight.

Yours truly,
C & J Smith

55. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw & Moulding Mills
Doveton & Dana Streets, Ballarat
6 August 1876

My dear John,

I intended to write you last mail but did not get it done. I was up country when last mail arrived and was pleased to find the home budget when I came back. I stayed a couple of nights with Willie Weatherly at Carranballac and found him very well. I enjoyed my couple of day's stay very much in that pastoral district. Since I was there last now many years ago Chirnside has made great additions to the house which is now a fine mansion. I was pleased to find that among the additions which have been made they had not forgot a well appointed billiard room where Willie and I had one or two games. I never cease to regret when I come across a table, which is very seldom, my utter want of skill at the game as it seems to me the nicest of all games and such pretty play in the hand of a good player. It must be very valuable as a source of amusement at a station tho' Willie says they seldom use it unless when visitors are there.

I was sorry to hear that Jane is still unwell. I hope she will soon be better. I am glad she is out of the old house. It must have been dull for her of late years. She should have cleared out after mother's death. I would like time to have joined Nancy and Violet and you in a final parting to the old walls in that grand old hymn Oh! God of Bethel by whose hands thy people still are fed". It dwells in my memory as one of the finest of the hymns and shews how enduring is his care when it is as true during our present time as in the days of the patriarchs that by his hands we "still are fed". A "wanderer" pretty well from my youth up it has perhaps more value in my eyes than in others and this with my liking for the old house always causes it to bring up to me a pleasant emotion.

In your letter of February 17 talking about Jane you say about sending her interest for money in our business. I sent her a draft by last mail with interest to date on all the money we held of hers. I do not owe any interest on any

money that is not paid and I wish you would write to Adam about it. I have done Jane's business for many years to the best of my ability and will only be too glad to let Adam who is her trustee do it.

So Eliza has "returned to her muttons"[170] at Dunkirk. In years gone by if my information is correct she was a muse of Goreings there though now perhaps she might not own the fact. Ghosts are reckoned fond of revisiting the scene of their former glory. So I suppose she could not do without revisiting France and fancy! a continental education for her children. Do you ever think of coming out here. I often think I would like to go home again for a visit but it seems ever more distant.

"And year by year our memory fades
From all the circle of the hills"[171]

Grace is sending Agnes and you a photo each of herself which you will allot as you like. She also sends kind love and I am my dear John

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

56. FROM JAMES SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballarat
13 May 1877

My dear John,

I own have been very remiss in not writing your for so long but to tell the truth I have felt so unwell for a long time that I had not the spunk in me to write more than that to Jane which I have ever kept up since our mother's death. All the time I was away upto the time of her death I never missed a mail [*illegible – page damaged*] for a wanderer on the face of the Earth as I was and seeing Jane represents the head of the house now I feel it my bounden duty let alone the pleasure to keep it up with her. I am glad to hear good accounts of the health of you all especially of Natin who has been long "under the humours".[172] I trust she is in the fair way of mending seeing she is getting stout. I got down lower in condition than I have been for many years but am

---

170 This saying usually means 'to return to the matter in hand', although Adam appears to be using it to mean something like 'return to a place she once stayed'.

171 From 'In Memoriam A.H.H.' (1850) by Alfred Lord Tennyson.

172 This phrase had the general meaning 'in poor health', although it was sometimes used to describe a period of melancholia or other mental distraction.

glad to say I am beginning to pick up again. When a fellow gets to 46 years he does not want to loose weight but rather to gain it and I found a sense of relief when I began to take the turn to a little more in the way of avoirdupois.[173]

Business is very dull on Ballaarat and I do not see what is to make it better unless we have a return to prosperity in mining which is at a very low ebb. We have had a general election on Friday in which the ministry have had a tremendous threshing so much so that I see nothing for them but to resign.[174] Willie Smiths brotherinlaw [*sic*] McPherson is Chief Secretary.[175] The election hinges upon the land taxation and if the opposition gets in power there is likely to be a strong fight between the so called upper and lower houses. My sympathies go entirely with the lower house or legislative assembly. [*illegible – page damaged*] I have in Broomfields Corner re always of course excluded) and sympathise fully with the men who want to stop the aggregation of large estates which are a perfect curse to the country. I had several invitations to stand for member of Ballaarat this time but could not see my way to it. Another time I may as it is a legitimate object for any man's ambition to represent one of the largest constituencies in the colony. If Adam could have seen his way to coming forward I think he would have gone in. The only thing against him was living in Melbourne.

Grace joins me in kind love to Nat and you and I am my dear John

Your affectionate brother,
James Smith

57. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
4 August 1877

Dear John,

Along with this you will receive proceeds of six Ballaarat debentures of £100 each the time for which has now expired and the secretary paid them with

---

173 *i.e.*, weight.

174 At the election held on 11 May for the 9th Parliament of Victoria, the Conservative government was soundly defeated by the Liberal opposition. The leader of the Conservatives, Sir James McCulloch, resigned and a new ministry was formed under the leader of the Liberals, Garaham Berry.

175 As Adam noted, John Alexander Macpherson was the Chief Secretary in McCulloch's government. He carried on in opposition before retiring from politics altogether in 1878.

interest to James who sent them to me and I have sent them to you. The amount paid for principal and interest to date was

	£634- 5-1
Exchange	£ 6- 7
Amount of draft	£627-18-1

And one for James Turnbull

Colonial Bank	£16-16
Less Exchange	9
	£16- 7

Of which please acknowledge receipt.

I am better of my last attack but it has left me very stiff and sore that I do not move about with my usual vigour.

I saw James last week who looks well but complained of my mothers old complaint indigestion. Thank goodness I never have any stomack complaints. I am still not very ready at writing as my hand gets fatigued so I must pull up.

Your affectionate Brother,
Adam Smith

58. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw and Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
2 October 1877

My dear John,

I am sorry I have to have to [*sic*] convey to you the bad news of the death of my brother James which as you will see took place by the newspaper at ¼ past am [*interlined*: on the 24th]. I did not know anything of it till I received a telegram from Mr Robertson of the Bank of Victoria on Sunday last at the house where I was staying in Melbourne telling me of his illness and then another one wishing me to come up on the Sunday evening. I tried the railways and all the livery stables but did not find one that would undertake to forward me. So I went next morning by the first train and when I arrived at Ballaarat I found that he had died that morning at ¼ past one o clock. The grief of his widow was very great. The funeral was next day and so much was he respected that the funeral was half a mile long and a great concourse of people were at the grave and I have since met at every footstep down the street people who

wanted to shake hands with me out of respect to him. Willie Smith Tom and Robert were up at the funeral. I went with Willie to the bank and found that James's account was overdrawn £2300. I have since gone over his books and papers and find that his estate may be deficient from £400 to £800 it depends on the turning out of the stock. It was agreed in the bank that Willie should recommend to my sisters that they supply any deficiency in the estate and I hope they will be able to. Robertson especially would not like to lose money with James, and Willie agreed with us and if my sisters feel inclined to pay the deficiency in James' estate they can either do it through me or through Willie. I have given my last pound. I have no money coming from the Melbourne business which has not paid me a pound for four years and except £350 from my father's bequest to me and which I place at the service of the estate I have nothing more except a wife and four children.

If my sisters will pay the deficiency in James estate it will be a good thing. The poor fellow died as completely of a broken heart as ever a man did he tried to stagger along with the Ballaarat Business and as he said to his wife it would not pay expenses and with bad debts he went to leeward from year to year. I never dreamt nor did anyone that he had such a large overdraft and poor fellow it killed him. He was so sensitive and gentle that he would edge away from his own affairs. If my sisters will make up the deficiency in his I hope they will with you as trustee send an absolute order to Willie to do so.

When I went to Melbourne Willie cleared up our estate there and took security over all we had. It seems it was Jane's and Violet's money and he cleared us up and took our property as security over six thousand pounds. Willie is naturally anxious that these securities should turn out right as I think they will, but as he is acting for my sister of course he is doubly so. He has got James' life policy for £1000 which with participation in profit amounts to £1134 and mine for £900 which with the same amounts now to about £1000. As James has died before the Newington shares[176] have matured I can only say that he saw afar off that they would pay off all our liabilities to Willie if the time were arrived and said so to his wife so if my sisters will give instructions to Willie to hold off realizing the securities and will send him a request to communicate with me before selling the Newington shares I think that all my sisters' money will be got out of them and some thing left to James' representative and to myself after they are sold a polite request would I think meet this case whereas if he goes in as trustee and realises as soon as they become so valuable as to meet the sum he has against them we will be left out literally in the cold with nothing in this earth to our name and a wife and four children to your humble servant's.

O John get my sisters to settle up James' deficiency. Smith Brothers' will work itself out but I think it would kill me if James' estate is declared insolvent.

---

[176] *i.e.*, shares in the Newington Freehold Gold Mining Company.

We have worked so hard but interest has ground us to death and has killed poor James.

I must pull up. Poor Grace is left with literally nothing except the furniture. If the Newington shares do well she may redeem her £1134 her husband's life policy. If any funds are sent out to me to liquidate James' liabilities I will do so and send home every cent I can save out of it. As I am in Melbourne with C & J Smith I do not owe one shilling out of Willie's mortgage.

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

He was quite prepared and said so to his wife he has gone to his own well beloved Darnick Corner.

59. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
4 October 1877

Dear John,

You will have by this mail the very sad intelligence of James death at Ballarat on the 24th September very suddenly and unexpectedly – he was anxious to see Adam after he was taken ill on Sunday but as there are no trains on that day it was impossible and so poor Grace was the only relative present, but no doubt she and Adam will give you all the particulars and very and sorryful they are. Since the funeral the affairs of the firm of Smith Brothers have been somewhat hurriedly looked into and I am sorry to say there will be a large deficiency which will mostly fall on the relations. You may remember they owed the original firm of C & J Smith about £6,600 mostly for cash advanced by Charles and John many years ago and which John's estate and myself five years ago when the firm was dissolved took over in joint account holding as security the deeds of their properties, life policies and mining share – no interest has been paid since April 66 and I think that after mon. securities are realized we will be about £3000 behind taking everything at its present value. Adam is sanguine that the Newington mining shares will greatly improve in value and other people think so also, but there is also the chance of their going down. The only other assets of the firm are about £1000 – good accounts and perhaps another £1000 in stock – there was also the house that James lived in value £700 – but two days ago since the state of matters was known Grace gave the deeds of it to Mr Robertson to reduce the bank overdraft from £2200 to £1500. Adam

protested against her doing so, but she said James wished her to and it was done not knowing that this is what the law calls a fraudulent proforma – about £100 will pay all the small creditors which is being done and then there will only be about four creditors amounting to about £300 to be dealt with outside the bank, Roberts and sundries and as no one knows about it yet Adam is very anxious to settle everything quietly and by paying a little to the outside creditors about £300 in amount I think to stave them off for four months or so, until he hears from you and so avoid insolvency. Adam has overdrawn his account with the firm of C & J Smith a little and ~~Robert~~ Smith Brothers owe Robert about £1000 no security, Bank of Victoria £1500 if they keep the house and I am afraid they also owe Jane £1100 for money which they used in their business and have paid her interest upon. Adam told me this yesterday her other investments and also James Turnbulls are quite right. I am afraid all these matters and the severe struggle they made to keep things square in the face of great difficulties and the utter colapse [*sic*] of Ballarat has told on James health and unfortunately they would hardly ever speak about money matters or things might have been better.

I hear that poor Grace is going home, everybody deeply sympathetic with her as James was greatly respected. There will be nothing left for her but the furniture and a few Newington mining shares. I need scarcely say that it is very painful for me to have to write to you about these affairs but think it right that you should know everything I know about them. I have had a great deal of trouble myself lately and only a fortnight ago lost my poor little infant boy.

I enclose bank draft for £500 for Violet. John keeps well.

Your affectionate cousin,
W. Smith

60. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
4 October 1877

Dear John,

I wrote you from Ballaarat giving you the bad news of James death poor fellow the state of his affairs broke him down altogether he has been falling off in strength for the last 12 months and died at last form the bursting of a blood vessel. I did not get up in time to see him but came up in the first train on the same morning that he died.

I gave you a sketch of his affairs but will give you a correct one if you will defer consideration of them till the next mail.

I am stationed at Ballaarat for the next two or three weeks but have come down here on some business.

I cannot tell you how acutely I feel James's loss. We have been so many years together and each was the only man in the colony to whom the other could speak confidentially. His wife is bearing up as well as can be expected of any woman who has lost a good husband.

Your affectionate Brother,
Adam Smith

61. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw and Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
31 October 1877

Dear John,

I wrote you last month informing you of James' death and this month I have written to Violet at large. There appears to me to be a declaration of war between Mrs James Smith and Willie who has all our properties and life insurance policies as well for securities for moneys advanced to Smith Brothers. Mrs James wants to get and keep the policy amounting to £1134 and they will have a set to at law I think if she can raise the money.

I wrote and asked Violet to come out and Jane and see if they can do anything to help us. If they did Willie might have his own way but it seems to me that if they would clear James estate and Willies portion of Smith Brothers the Newington dividends would pay for it in two or three years. I scarcely know what the amount acquired would be but somewhere about

Willies	£3500
James estate	800
	4300

I do not believe Willie would advise them to do it and I would not like them to lose money but I think the Newington would ultimately recoup them at [*i.e.* ?and] leave James widow and me the shares ultimately.

I enclose Janes Bank of Victoria dividend £34-15-6 less commission and all the money I have here on account of James Turnbull's gas shares £4-10.

Yours in haste,
Adam Smith

62. FROM JOHN SMITH TO ADAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
21 November 1877

My dear Adam,

I duly received your letter with its sad and sorrowful tidings of dear James' death. It came on us like a thunder clap and I can hardly realise that we can never on earth see his face again. Poor fellow he has left many sorrowful hearts behind and many warm recollections and memories of him which will not quickly fade away. It must be a great sorrow to you so much more among strangers than we are here, and I do desire to mingle my tears with yours most sympathisingly over his departure. Blessed be god we do not require to mourn as those that have no hope – but give thanks that we are well assured that he has entered into rest. It must have been a disheartening [*illegible*] fighting against difficulties with him for a long time, but he has now left the region of difficulties and storms and the rest will be the sweeter with his Savior [*sic*] and with many whom he loved on earth. Oh the rest and peace and gladness which the realisation of this give us here amid all our many trials and troubles and difficulties. I am sure our Heavenly Father does not mean us ever to want the comfort of it here – if we would only take him at his bare word.

I hope you have ere this received the telegram which in family council we resolved to send to you from Edinburgh. I went with it there that we might give it the best chance possible and that there might be nothing known of it. I do trust it was a relief to you to know that our sisters were willing to do all that was possible to meet the difficulty. Jane is eminently willing to give up all claim to the £1100 in the Ballaarat business and as William Smith is a trustee in the Darnlee Trust and has the command of funds we concluded it would be best to empower him to settle matters hoping to pay off as soon as possible the bank deficiency and the smaller claims. Violet is also desirous to settle with the cousins and the Darnlee Trust and is most thankful it is in her power. I have written to William at her request giving him full powers and I trust all will be settled as soon as possible.

We hope that the Newington shares may be brought to good account yet and that you may get something from them and will look anxiously for the next mail and hope things will turn out not so far amiss

You must have both had very hard times and have both born up bravely against wind and tide and it grieves us all very much to think of it. You have kept your own council only too well for we did not know and fancied when you got into the Melbourne business your pecuniary troubles would be greatly over.

Poor Grace we feel deeply for her she will be in very great trouble and have little to look to – she will doubtless soon be turning her thoughts homeward where her father and sisters are very anxious to receive her. Violet asks Willie to see that she has sufficient for her needs and to pay her passage when she wishes to return. I sent him also a [*interlined*: certified] copy of James settlement left with Freer & Dunn when he left this country in 1859 and also a bank draft for 2 years feu of the Smiddy lees etc (less some law expenses) for £44-11-1. This I had for James from the bank before I heard of his death. There will be this feu and James Mitchell's house together worth £27 or 28 pounds yearly towards Grace's support on this side.

I am exceedingly sorry to learn that you have lost so much and do wish that it had been in my power to assist you but I have been buckled to a dear farm and have had enough to do to swing along for the last twelve or fourteen years so that it has never been in my power to make a farthing off it. The present season promises to be a disastrous one and there is much land being thrown on the market to let. I earnestly trust better times may yet be in store for us both and things take a turn. Like you I have always had a good deal of borrowed money on my head to keep me down and it is scarcely possible to redeem it in farming. We must however stick the closer together in heart as the ranks are thinning and I hope to write and to hear more frequently from you. The Lord has been kind to us in giving us good sisters. It would do your heart good to see the eagerness with which they go to the rescue. You have indeed their warmest love and sympathy and with the same adieu myself I am my dear Brother

Ever yours affectionately,
John Smith

P.S. Receipt has never yet been owned for £101 draft in power of "Smith Brothers" on the bank of New South Wales Melbourne dated 11th April last and which must have reached long ago. It was James Turnbulls Estate do please let me know if it has reached you. I have the duplicate here if the original has failed to reach you.
Yours ever JS

63. FROM JOHN SMITH TO WILLIAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
21 November 1877

My dear Cousin,

I duly received your letter 4th October last with its very distressing tidings of my brother James' death and also of the embarrassed state of his circumstances. Poor fellow he must have been struggling hard against wind and tide for a long time and no doubt it would tend to wear him out.

He seems to have been in poor health for more than 12 months back but he must have been much weaker than we had any idea of.

We have held a family council over the circumstances and to relieve anxiety and probably prevent unnecessary exposure we sent a telegram to Adam from Edinburgh to the effect that the sisterhood would come forward and endeavour to relieve the difficulty. This we hope has been received by this time. My sister Jane is eminently ready to give up her claim to the £1100 you make mention of and Violet empowers me to say that she will pay the deficiency at the bank and the debts which you estimate at about three or four hundred pounds and she hopes that you will take this matter in hand at your earliest convenience. She is also most desirous that Robert and you should in no wise be losers indeed her great wish is that she herself should be the only creditor on the estate of Smith Brothers. Would you be kind enough to let us know what sum will be necessary to discharge all liabilities alike to yourself, Robert, and the Darnlee Trust.

You may have an idea by the time you receive this what the assets are likely to realize. We hope Adam may be right in his anticipations concerning the Newington shares – if you think they are likely to become valuable of course it might be well to retain them for a time – but you are the best judge of this yourself. Payment of the deficiency could be made either by you withholding remittances for a time or Violet could realise some of her investments on this side and remit to you if preferred.

We will be glad to have your views as to what will be the best plan and Violet hopes you will act for her with full powers in the whole matter.

Your letter states that no interest has been paid since "April 66". Has there been no mistake with figures? If there was a great deal of interest it might be beyond her power to discharge <u>all</u> claims.

We feel deeply for poor Grace – she was an excellent wife and made James very happy. She will no doubt be anxious to come home to her father and sister before long and will apparently have little to pay her passage and incidental expenses. Violet would be obliged if you would see that she is supplied with adequate funds for the passage as well as see that she is suitably provided for as

long as she is in the colony. There will be a yearly income of about twenty seven or twenty eight pounds for her from subjects at home viz the feu and house above school. I enclose a bank draft [*interlined*: original] for £44-11-1 the proceeds of two years feu (less some law expenses) which I had procured from the bank for James before we heard of his death and which you can give to her. I enclose a verified copy of a will James left with Freer & Dunn when he went ~~first~~ to Australia in 1859. The feu duty and house can be secured to Violet and her boys in fee (after Grace's liferent) towards what will be advanced. Agnes had a letter the other day from Grace's sister urging her coming home to them and no doubt her thoughts will soon turn in that quarter.

We cannot help wishing much that they had let us know better how matters stood at Ballaarat. It was hard for Adam and James poor fellows spending the best of their days there and working so hard as they did and yet making nothing but the complete collapse of mining at Ballaarat of course destroyed their otherwise fair chances of success. Poor James we are well assured is now beyond the region of storms and is safe for eternity through the merits of our Saviour. Truly this is a shifting scene and we all need to be taking stock for eternity. You must have been realising this to the full with your [*interlined*: recent and] repeated bereavements. I need not say that you have our deepest sympathy.

Glad to hear that John keeps well he will be getting quite a little companion for you now – my youngsters are getting up just and very romping and robust they are. My sisters write with kindest regards to yourself and all friends and I remain

Your affectionate cousin,
John Smith

P.S. thanks for the draft for £500 inclosed in your letter and which I handed to Violet. J.S.

64. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw and Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
28 November 1877

Dear John,

I only have time to enclose to you bank draft on London for £59-8 being Jane's government debentures less 12/ commission to bank and post office

order for James Turnbull for £5 which is all the money I have got here. I will be at Melbourne next mail I hope and will send the balance.

All well here. Willie Smith has been ill in Melbourne but is better again.

Yours in haste,
Adam Smith

65. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
29 November 1877

Dear John,

I would have written you by last mail but the evening before it left [I] was laid up with a dangerous attack of bilious fever from which I am now slowly recovering and till now have been unable to attend to any business. I am sorry to say that things are not progressing satisfactorily at Ballarat owing to Mrs James' peculiar conduct. At first we asked her to take out letters of administration to James estate – this she declined to do as she said there was nothing for her – and so Adam applied as next of kin and would have got administration in a week or so when she changed her mind giving the reason that she could not get James home letters from the post office although she was told that Adam as administrator would get the letters before she could and that her administrating now would only delay it which it has done – however she would have her way – her real reason is now apparent as she has made a claim on the insurance company for payment to herself of £1134 under the policy which James by on regular legal document assigned to us nearly six years ago and the premiums on which have only been paid by their getting deeper into our debt. As a trustee in John's estate as well as in my own account I am bound to resist this dishonest claim but in doing so publicity will have to be given to these matters which I am anxious to avoid. It is a common thing for policies to be assigned here and my lawyer says she has not the shudder of a claim either legal or moral and even if she was successful it would go from us to the general creditors and not to her and the effect of her trying to test the legality of what her husband deliberately did and so repudiating his acts will be to force the estate into the Insolvent Court – all this has been pointed out to her without effect – the mining shares in the Newington Company although assigned to us by deed are still in James name in the company's register but we can get an order from the Supreme Court to transfer them but of course that would be made public – whereas if I had confidence in Mrs James she as administratrix might transfer them. This requires consideration, as she goes in entirely for herself whoever suffers.

Even if we get insurance money and mining shares our loss will be at least £3000 between us. Some time ago Violet wrote about the rate of interest they [*sic*] Smith Bros were paying and I meant to have written to her about it but it did not matter as they had ceased to pay any interest and have not done so for about two years – indeed the firm have only paid out of their <u>own business</u> about 2½ per cent on our advance to them from the time it was taken over till now – Adam out of C & J Smiths business having paid about another 2½ per cent the remainder being unpaid so that the interest paid to us did not weigh heavily on them – the bank charged them 10 per cent and 8 is the lowest rate in Ballarat. Perhaps you may think me a little harsh on Mrs James but I do not wish to be so and cannot help thinking how very differently James would have acted and I think everything might have gone smoothly if she had sold the furniture and some 40 Newington shares worth in all about £400 or £500 and gone home leaving Adam, Roberston and myself to arrange everything which might have been done easily I think. Now however as I am ordered by the doctor to go to the country for a few weeks and avoid worry and business her lawyer and ours must try and manage matters. Adam is doing his best to do so.

Mr Robertson of the bank after first threatening very foolishly to sue me for this overdraft did the same with Robert as Adams partner, but soon discovered that the bank had no claim against us [and] says he intends to apply to Jane and Violet for payment and I must say that the banks claim is by no means a strong one at any rate not better than any one else's.

You may think that our joint advance to Adam and James was rather large but you must remember that we inherited it from Charles and John and even if we had wished could not have realized upon it unless some favorable turn had taken place at Ballarat which we always hoped for on every ones account. I am very sorry that some of James money will be lost. Adam and I will do our best to prevent the bank from taking his shares in Adams name as in set off for their overdraft. The manager in Melbourne told me he thought they could do it and I argued with him they could not as they know the shares were not his but belonged to Jane and we consulted with a leading barrister here who has no doubt at all that the bank has no claim. I fancy that when the small creditors are all paid we might settle things amicably with the bank if Mrs James would only stand aside. I may mention that every thing else in Johns estate is satisfactory, indeed most have rather improved in value particularly the gas shares which have gone up about 30 per cent within the last year and that the farm which was let at £218 has been relet at £300 for 5 years. Adam thinks their Newington shares might go up <u>when they get gold</u> from £4 to perhaps £15 or £20 but they might be <u>quite valueless</u> within one year in they do not strike the gold. Trusting you are all well. I remain

Your affectionate cousin,
W. Smith

66. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO AN UNKNOWN RECIPIENT (EXTRACT)

Memo for John Smith Leaderfoot [*in John Smith's handwriting, no date or place given*]

The bank claim Jane's Bank of Victoria shares worth I think about £1100 as they are in Adams name, he has however served them (the bank) with notice that the shares do not belong to him but to Jane Smith Darnick Scotland but Adam is afraid to transfer them as the bank have threatened him. Jane ought to send out a power of attorney [*interlined*: at once] to some one [*interlined*: say Willie] to act for her, this would relieve Adam and possibly save Jane a heavy loss. After the last mail Adam told me he had written home though urging both Jane and Violet to come out here a most absurd proposition and one which if carried out would only make their affairs public, this we are endeavouring to avoid. The fact is that in the midst of his troubles poor Adam has quite lost his head for business and sound on all other subjects makes the most absurd proposals on this matter – catching at straws.

Mr Robertson of the Bank of Victoria Ballarat also it appears has had the impudence to write home asking Smith Brothers' sisters to make good any loss the bank may make this after inducing Mrs James and Adam to hand over the deeds of James house as a security worth from £800 to £900 to the bank although the bank has had a good customer or Smith Bros for the last 16 years and never charged less than 10 per cent for any money but they the bank can better afford to lose than any other creditors.

I am very sorry for Jane, the great advance on Violet (John Mill estate) gas shares will almost make up any deficiency there may be, but Jane who has had no good luck but a good deal of the reverse in her investments here is hard hit indeed and if we can in any way be of service she can command our best services. Please to show this to John Smith and read to him that part of my letter describing Mrs James conduct.

William Smith

67. FROM JOHN SMITH TO ADAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
19 December 1877

My dear Adam,

I duly received yours with draft for £34-15-6 less commission [*interlined*: Jane's] Bank of Victoria Melbourne and which I have handed to her. Also PO

order for £470 in account of James Turnbulls gas shares. You have not yet acknowledged receipt of the draft [*interlined*: for £101] in favor of Smith Bros in the bank of New South Wales Melbourne dated 11 April last – no doubt the pressure of circumstances has put it out of you mind – but I hope the acknowledgement will be on the road.

We were indeed [*interlined*: heart] grieved to hear [*interlined*: from your letter to Violet] all the distressing complications of which you have been the sufferer and most sincerely do we sympathize with you in them all. It would be a relief to you to get our telegram and following that the letters stating that Violet would gladly stand in the breach and ~~become the only creditor~~ take the debts of Smith Brothers [*interlined*: on her own shoulders including your overdraft on C & J Smith]. She has sent instructions to Willie [*interlined*: to this effect] and to wind up ~~matters~~ the matters as soon as possible and prudent[ly].

I sincerely trust your anticipations about the Newington shares may be fully realised and leave you something yet – ~~but I fear anything at Ballaarat is rather precarious now~~. We have had an anxious family council and if we could, how gladly we would have helped [*interlined*: you] bear the burden my dear brother.

The complications which have arrived since your last letter have vexed us much and we have been ~~considering~~ wondering what course would be open to you were ~~you to find it necessary to leave our cousins~~ present resources to fail you – of course £300 a year is not to be lightly thrown away – but as you say it cannot be counted upon with security and you will remain no doubt until you can do ~~something more advisable to supply the needful~~ better. [*two illegible scored-out and overwritten words*] ~~thinking that if we could send you a gift of £1000 that you could might find out something to start a fresh tho' it might not be on a very large scale. You will be looking about for another string to your bow~~.

We were much disappointed and vexed with the action taken by Grace in not at once surrendering the life policy and doing all in her power to promote the settlement of affairs, it was surely the only honorable course open to her to give it up and certainly she has been badly advised ~~and will be entirely ignorant of business~~. It would I think be very desirable for her to come home to her father and sister as soon as possible. We have been thinking also it would be a good thing to have your boy home in the way of getting his education and if Eliza will send him here I will either take him to Leaderfoot or [*interlined*: buy his] board with McLellan[177] untill [*sic*] you are in smoother waters. ~~As to the girls~~ I will write to Eliza on the subject. As to the girls I do think your best plan

---

177 Andrew McLellan was the headmaster of Highfield House School, Melrose. It took in both day pupils and boarders and advertised that its 'Course of Education prepares [pupils] for the Edinburgh Higher Schools, for the University, for the Army and other Examinations, and for Business' (*The Southern Reporter*, 21 August 1879). A class 'for Agricultural Subjects' was also offered.

would would [*sic*] be to ~~ask Eliza~~ try and arrange with Eliza to send them to Miss Yeo (I enclose her prospectus). They would there receive a first-rate education and be under most kind and conscientious superintendence and ~~she would likely abate her terms moderate tho' they be~~ at a most moderate cost – she is a practical common sense admirable woman a little of the Miss Phin type but of somewhat gentler mould.[178]

Violet has sent a draft for £100 to you this mail which I trust you will receive safely. If you were to see any favorable openings and a little money were needful ~~we would~~ if we could send you a gift of £1000 ~~you could manage with that as capital~~ if that ~~wold~~ would give you a fresh start – ~~Violet has~~ but no doubt you will look well ahead before you cut your present connections and considering that in all business there are risks [*interlined*: I am sure you will agree with me] to thinking it would be necessary to invest Jane's funds in her own name because of course she has nothing else to fall back upon. In connection with this it occurs to us that by the terms of your will left here with Freer & Dunn when you went away (similar to James') your wife is constituted your administrator on your estate. You can see that this would not work if they were in your name. Kindly refer to it when you next write. [*end of draft*]

68. FROM JOHN SMITH TO WILLIAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Darnlee, Melrose, N.B.
20 December 1877

~~My dear Cousin,~~

~~I trust you would have news by the telegram we sent to Adam some time ago that Violet was~~

My dear Cousin,

I trust you will ere this heard by the telegram sent to Adam of Violets intention ~~to stand in the breach and~~ to relieve the difficulties in Smith Brothers estate.

~~We are extremely sorry to see by letters from Adam of James' widow the ill advised attitude she has assumed by James' widow in the matter, she must have bad advisers at Ballaarat~~. [*illegible scored-out word*]

The elapse of another month only the more confirms her desire and resolution to clear off as far as she can [*interlined*: all] the [*overwritten with*: their] debts ~~in the estate of Smith Brothers. I can see they are very considerable~~

178 Sarah Phin had been a teacher at St Mary's Trinity School, Melrose.

~~but the sooner they are met the better~~ [*interlined*: as well as Adams overdraft in the firm of C & J Smith] and she is looking to you to take full action in the matter ~~as far as you think proper~~ and apply ~~her income funds accruing~~ to her ~~for that purpose~~ [*interlined*: for that purpose the funds accruing to her].

There will also ~~also~~ be the proportion of her income ~~fortunately~~ [*interlined*: which may be still] unremitted ~~which it would be her desire to apply to that purpose~~. [*interlined*: the rest ~~I think~~ could be met ~~competently~~ by withholding remittances for a time or we could remit from this side but I trust you will let us know what you think is required in the matter.]

We are indeed grieved to see the [*interlined*: vexed and] stupid ill advised attitude James' widow has assumed in the matter ~~but trust that the telegram would help to make matters smoother~~ but she will be utterly ignorant ~~in the matter~~ of business and does not seem to have prudent advisers ~~at Ballararat~~. However I hope the telegram would be in time to relieve ~~the anxiety~~ some extent the anxiety which naturally would be felt in the matter.

~~There is no doubt but that the sooner Grace comes home to her father and sister the better. Her needs will not be great with them and they can be supplemented here and be in time to prevent any legal steps being taken that might bring the matter before the public~~.

There is no doubt but that the sooner Grace comes home to her father and sister the better.

Adam [*illegible over-written word*] hopes much for the Newington shares ~~and as the time when it is hoped they will be more valuable is near at hand it might~~ and I would fain hope they may yield something more than they are worth at present. If you find it advisable you might give them a chance. We will look anxiously to hear from you again.

Your mother and sisters are well but I have not seem them for a ~~time~~ while. Trusting you and your little boy are well and with kind regards I remain

Your affectionate cousin,
John Smith

69. FROM JOHN SMITH TO ELIZA SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
26 December 1877

My dear Eliza,

The mails from Australia for the last two months have troubled us all very much – that in November bringing us the sad tidings of brother James' death and the

December mail giving such a sad account of the state of affairs of the firm of Smith Bros and the altered conditions of matters at Ballaarat and Melbourne Adam being no longer a partner in the firm of C & J Smith.

I cannot tell you how sorry we are all about it and how deeply we felt for Adam. He struggled long and bravely against the adverse circumstances arising out of the collapse of Ballaarat. My sisters are doing all in their power to lighten his burden out there and to keep the business out of the insolvent court and also out of the mouths of the public. Here also we would be glad to do anything in our power to lighten his responsibilities. I have been thinking it is most important that your Charles should now be getting a good education and mixing with other boys and when writing to Adam last week I suggested that if you approve he might be sent to Scotland to Mr McLellan's at Highfield where my boys go and where he would be well attended to. I would either take him to Leaderfoot or pay his board at McLellans [*interlined*: for a while] when Adam may be in better circumstances. Will you kindly let me hear what you think of this plan as it would sometime [*sic*] it takes so long to hear from Australia. Mr McLellan's next session begins on the 15th of January and if you thought you could manage to send him then it would be well.

Would you not think of sending your girls to Miss Yeo's school. I do not think that you could get any school so good on such moderate terms. I sent Adam her prospectus to call his attention to it and he may possibly be writing to you about it. I trust you and the children are keeping well this winter. They will be growing quite out of our knowledge now. You must have had a very hard time of it when they were all down with the measles but it is well that they have got it over. I am glad to say our little ones are well and unite with Agnes and myself in sending our kindest Christmas greetings and best wishes of the season. I remain

Yours affectionately,
John Smith

70. FROM ELIZA SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Rosendael
31 December 1877

My dear John,

I received your letter on Saturday evening and I thank you very much for your very kind offer for Charlie.

About three mails ago Adam wrote to me about my boy saying he would like so much if he could be sent to Darnick to go to school with Violet's and

your boys (coming to me for the holidays) – also that he would write to Violet and arrange with her about money matters regarding his land etc. Since then Adam has had other things to think about and I did not mention it to Violet not wishing to trouble her at this time. If I can at all manage the terms I cannot entertain for a moment your most kind offer either to board him at Mr McLellans or have him at Leaderfoot you having so many little ones at home. I could not think of you being troubled by him should he go he had better be a boarder at the school. Your boys are of course day scholars – can the school be thoroughly so commended as a boarding school – is the food good and plentiful. Charlie is not yet 8 years old and requires a good deal of attention (as I have always given him) – in little things while at Miss Hager in London he has been <u>well taken care</u> of in every way – the only draw back was I did not consider the boys had enough <u>air</u> or were not out enough and the terms were rather high 40 guineas a year with extras – they were very kind to him and he was most comfortable and he got on wonderfully well for the short time he was there. He is quite advanced enough for his age and very eger [*sic*] to learn. I have kept him back instead of makeing [*sic*] him learn – I found I could not keep him at home consequently I sent him to a boys school in Dunkerque – it is surprising how quickly he has picked up french – he speaks very well now. If you will kindly send me a prospectus with the lessons I will be much obliged. I do not see how I can send him alone – he could go to London by boat alone – but I would hardly like to trust the little fellow alone on such a long journey – from London to Melrose. Do you know of anyone in London going [?that] way during the month of January. There there [*sic*] are steamers ~~going~~ that go from this to Leith every three weeks. I can enquire and perhaps I may hear of some one going to Scotland.

I cannot tell you how grieved I am about your brother James death. It has made a sad Xmas to us all – poor Adam has his full share of trouble – he had already informed me about the sad state of affairs he found when he went to Ballarat and what trouble he now has and to settle disputes he had written to his sisters to go out if they could manage it to settle his affairs. It is most kind of your sisters to give their help so readily and I do sincerely hope they will not be losers and I trust in time things may get right. So saying I cannot tell you how much I owe to Violet [for] her kindness to us all has been more than ordinary kindness – she has been constantly giving to one or another of us since coming home.

As regards Miss Yeo I had an interview with her once in London – she has raised her terms to £30 – and everything extra. My girls have had so many interruptions before coming here I consider it a pity they should leave the one they are at as it is also a good school and for boarders only £25 a year including French and English. I have had my full share of expence [*sic*] to do all for the best and I find I cannot send them to any boarding school it costs too much. I tried it while in London for 4 month they were all at school. I could not have

managed it without assistance. I had nothing for myself. I lived with my mother and my sister Margaret along with my mother has helped to clothe us all for the last two years. I find house rent (I have a small cottage here a little more than a mile from town) and living and schools very much cheaper than any other place that I have been in and I can assure you I appreciate it after living with my family in lodgings having so much discomfort – of course I am isolated from all my relatives which is a great draw back but whatever is for the good of the children I do not care for myself – the girls go to school as day boarders – that is having dinner at school – and returning in the evening they learn English and music as extras – English only being free to boarders. I am very anxious for them to learn french and german while they are young it comes so much easier and then for them to study hard at English when they leave this. The childrens future seems very dark to me now and I am doing my utmost to get them on – Ula would be much the better of being at a boarding school where she would be well attended to as she is so very easy going but perhaps in an other year or so we can manage it. I have done my very best for them (I cannot say but that others would have done far better) and I am very grieved as things have turned out that I cannot do so well any more as I have had the luxury of a servant for the last two months – which of course is extra expense – but I am not so strong nor so young as I have been and neither have I so much energy and consequently I have been compelled to have one, for the last three years I have done without any assistance until now. Pray pardon me writing so much about ourselves. I fear I have wearied you out sadly. I did not mean to write so much when I began. Thanking you once more for your kind offer about Charlie and with very kind love to you all I am always

Yours affectionately,
E. Smith

We all wish you and yours a very happy new year and many of them.

71. FROM JOHN SMITH TO WILLIAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
17 January 1878

My dear Cousin,

I duly received yours of the 29th November last and am grieved to hear that the situation at Ballaarat is so disappointing and that Mrs James continues to ~~act so contrary~~ to persecute her claim to the life policy and in general to act so

foolishly in the matter. ~~You I cannot say anything in addition to what has been already written~~ You will now however before this be in possession of Violets views and intentions in the matter and have her written authority to act for her and to do the best for all parties in the circumstances. We were sorry to hear that the bank was claiming James' shares to make up the loss which are in Adams name. ~~We thought it best~~ Jane is presently staying with ~~Mrs Campbell~~ Dr Smith in Edinburgh and as her interest has been threatened by the bank we thought it best that she should send you a power of attorney to act for her in ~~all~~ her investments etc. and I went with her to Mitchell & Baxter where she signed the document and I expect you will have it from them by the same mail. We ~~will do all~~ [*illegible scored-out word*] hope that the state of matters may not come before the public – but the way Mrs James seems to be acting ~~it will not~~ is much against it. I was glad to hear that the gas shares (Johns Trust) had improved so much and that [*interlined*: the] farm also ~~it will go far to~~ has been let much higher than formerly

Perhaps [*interlined*: it might be as well] if her money ~~might b~~e were invested by you ~~some~~ in her own name in some good stocks ~~which~~ the interest of which could be drawn in this country but this can be considered.

We were very sorry [*interlined*: indeed] to hear that you had been so poorly – bilious fever [is] a very frustrating disease ~~and one for which~~ You seem to have ~~been~~ had a [*interlined*: very] severe attack. I sincerely hope you have long ere this recovered your usual strength – ~~after you have got all the troublesome present complications arranged a visit home would do you much good~~.

Your affectionate cousin,
John Smith

72. FROM JOHN SMITH TO ADAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
17 January 1878

My dear Adam,

Yours of the 28th December last came safely to hand with first of Exchange on the Bank of Victoria for Fifty-nine pounds £ dated Ballaarat 28 November 1877 being sister Jane's government debentures less 12/- commission to Bank. Also post office order for Five pounds for James Turnbull. We were disappointed not to have heard that the telegram had reached before the mail left however no doubt you would have it directly after. We are all sorry to hear

that things are not progressing satisfactorily at Ballaarat and that Grace is still persisting with the attitude she took up about the life policy etc. I trust however that the home letters will have smoothed matters now. We were exceedingly sorry to hear that the bank were claiming Jane's shares and threatening you if you transferred them. To relieve you ~~and to~~ and secure them we thought it best for Jane to send a power of attorney to Willie to act for her. We did not see what else could well be done and trust that there will be no difficulty in getting he matters put right. It seems that Willie has been empowered by Violet also to do the best [*interlined*: for all parties] in the circumstances.

It must have been a trying time for you and we all feel sorry for you and willing to assist you to the utmost of [our] power if you will let us know now.

I wrote to Eliza asking her send little Charles here and I think he will likely come – but I am expecting ~~he will let me know~~ to hear from her again when we can look for him.

I have as yet no acknowledgement of the £10 sent last April to Smith Bros for behoof of James Turnbull – will you ~~kindly notice~~ [*interlined*: be sure] [*sic*] it in your next. I fear Jamie ~~or Mr Elliot~~ [*interlined*: may be] referring to it. I do not know what you are but I must say I am tired of the administration of it here. I was presented lately with an account incurred by Jamie at a hotel at Silloth[179] for £17-7 which of course I declined to have anything to do with but there is much bother with him and ill temper and if it could be put on another footing I would be glad. He threatens me with law proceedings and have no doubt you will be tired of it also and if you wished to get quit of the bother and responsibility of it your best plan would be to consign it to Mr Elliot Galalaw[180] ~~or any writer he may recommend – Mr Elliot is~~ the only [*interlined*: man who has any control over Jim or] authority Jim recognises ~~in this country~~. Of course it would never do to let Jim get it into his own hands or he would finish himself off at once with it. I do not suppose he would undertake it himself but if you wished to be quit of it he would find some paid agent who would undertake it.

Jane is now in Edinburgh staying a while at Dr Smiths. Violets boys have been staying here in the holidays.

I must now close as it is close to post time. Agnes joins me in kindest love to you and hoping the time will soon be here when the present clouds will disappear from the sky and the sun again shine out.

I am ever, dear Adam,
Your affectionate Brother,
John Smith

---

179 A village and parish in Cumbria.

180 James Elliot was the tenant of Galalaw, a farm in the parish of Kelso, Roxburghshire.

73. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
23 January 1878

My dear Cousin,

I duly received your letter of the 21st November last and Adam received your telegram about three weeks before when I was on a visit to the country for the benefit of my health and it was thought advisable to do nothing until your letters came.

Violet and Janes desire to see that no one loses by Smith Brothers is unquestionably most praiseworthy and honorable as there is neither a legal nor moral obligation to do so, but so far as I am personally concerned I never have and cannot now consent to take one penny from any one to which I am not both legally and morally entitled, indeed I have always been quite willing to bear my share of the loss and never thought of anything else.

The advance to Smith Bros at the time C. & J. Smith dissolved partnership in Summer 72 was about £3000 with £340 overdue interest for which no security was held, they also owed the bank about £3000 at 10 per cent interest and it held all the securities, we, Johns estate and myself, by arrangement with them paid the banks debt charging 8 per cent and took over their securities which at that time we hoped were enough to cover both debts if Ballarat progressed. Then thinking it would greatly relieve the Ballarat business Adam was invited to join the Melbourne firm thereby saving Smith Bros at least £400 a year for his expenses besides paying £240 of old and over £900 of new interest in the increased debt all out of C. & J. Smith's business, indeed Smith Bros paid us very little interest out of their business only 2½ per cent as I have calculated seeing none was paid since April 76 and they both frequently spoke of our friendliness as I have letters from James to shew and now I think it very dishonorable in Mrs James knowing these things to give so much trouble, to try and increase the loss for his own benefit and to speak and act as if we had been harsh creditors.

The attempt made to repudiate the deliberate act and deed of her husband who assigned the policy to us in good faith 5½ years ago is particularly ungracious, as the only legal quibble she could raise was that we did not register the deed in the Insurance Companys books which was not done out of consideration for James, and in the office they told me she was the first widow that had tried to take advantage of non registration under the circumstances – however the Act of Parliament making registration necessary was not passed when the assignment was made and so the attempt to upset it completely failed. She declined my offer to state the case in writing to any respectable solicitors or

barristers in Melbourne for his opinion and now makes a virtue of necessity in abandoning the improper claim, but it has caused and will cause a deal of trouble.

As the bank can do nothing, in the meantime I do not propose negotiating with it till every thing is finally settled on a fair and legal basis, and Robertson is not intitled to much consideration after trying to confiscate Jane's shares in the bank although he will know they were held by Adam in trust for her, and his threat to make Robert responsible for Smith Bros debts coupled with Mrs James conduct so frightened Robert that for his own protection he had to have a dissolution of his partnership with Adam.

The yard was sold on Friday for £1530 and the stock will realize Adam thinks about £350. The Newington shares are rather lower in price viz. £3 per share and we have to pay another call of ¼ besides the 3/ per share paid lately, they say the reef is found but no gold has yet been seen altogether it is a precarious asset.

As you authorised me I offered Mrs James £100 – which with the £41 you sent and the value of 40 Newingtons in his name £120 and the furniture say £250 should be enough to start for home with as all his household expenses have been paid out of the business, if the furniture does not realize £200 she wants other £50.

I have just returned from Queenscliff where I have been spending a fortnight with Johny and am not able by this mail to tell exactly how things will turn out till everything is settled.

Trusting you are all well. I remain

Your affectionate cousin,
W. Smith

P.S. I quite agree with you that it would have been much better if we had known earlier how things were at Ballarat but they always expected a favorable change that the Newington shares would have turned out very valuable.

74. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
24 January 1878

My dear John,

I herewith enclose Bank Draft for £21-1 made up as follows

Colonial Bank dividend	£16-18
Balance Gas ditto	5
Commission on ditto exchange 10/	21-18
Ditto on £14 formerly sent 7	17
	£21- 1

which please acknowledge.

We bought Gas shares with the last £100 you sent out for James Turnbull and were just in the very nick of time as they have since risen £2 per share.

The Gas Dividends the last time were Melbourne £12-10 Collingwood £6-10. I remitted them in a lubberly way from Ballaarat month after month as I was staying there and had no one to do my business here. The above sum of £5 completes the Gas dividend.

We are now getting along better here the kindness and munificence of my sisters having made mountains easy. I will give you the right history of Mrs James' demand for her husband's insurance policy however. I had been staying in the house with her for weeks and she never mentioned the subject and when I went away for three days she wrote to me that she had applied for letters of administration to her husband's estate although she knew my lawyer had already applied for them for me she said that at the post office they refused to deliver up her husband's letters except to his administrator and only gave her the letters in her promising to do so. Then she told me a few days afterwards that she meant to get her husband's insurance money as the law provided that the widow should get it. I told her of course that it was made over as security along with mine and that she could not and that I had never heard of such a law. Her lawyer went on all right till the bondsmen were required and then she could not get any bondsmen and so the matter remained in status quo. Willie offered to put it as an ABC case to a barrister when she told me that Tom Smith was her adviser in the matter. I told Willie so and he met Tom and spoke to him about it when Tom could not sustain his assertion that by law it belonged to the widow and I believe agreed to withdraw it. Willie would have fought out to the end and when my sisters cleared him of any liability it only made him more determined to save their money. There are wheels within wheels. Tom dislikes his brothers as much as a certain person does Holy Water and the mainspring of his action was that he wished to make Willie lose some money and took this disreputable method of doing so.

When I mentioned some of Mrs James characteristics in a letter some years ago the Home people wrote one back that I must be mistaken and that she was a peacemaker but my dear John if she comes home just you look out and if she does not fulfill [*sic*] my prognostications I will eat my boots. She is a clever woman in what I would call a mean way so you look out I say again. She

wanted her husband's policy because it was not registered a thing which Willie did not do so that no one would know it.

Mrs James talks of selling off her household furniture in a month. I do not know when she is going home.

I have written the above because it is necessary you should know it in dealing with an unscrupulous and rather clever woman who will assume religious appearances [*interlined*: and why should not she]. Do not tell any one but keep this to yourself. I must pull up.

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

75. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
20 February 1878

My dear John,

I received by last mail your welcome letter and very glad I was to hear from you I can tell you. Since poor James died I have had very anxious times of it I can assure you and the letters I have had from home have been the only consolation that I have had at all but first to business. I would make a will tomorrow if I had anything to leave but having nothing I do not see the use of it. I will however hand over Jane's securities to Willie Smith in whose hands they will be quite safe. James Turnbull's shares are in C & J Smith's safe and Willie draws the dividends of them handing them over to me so they are the same as if they were in Willie's hands. It was by his advice that I bought Gas shares with the £100 pounds [*sic*] you sent out for Turnbull and it came in right time we bought before the companies amalgamated and when they did shares rose very much in value so that Turnbull's Gas shares are worth more than what we gave for them by a good deal. I cannot go into it tonight but I will draw out a statement and send it to you next mail. I am exceedingly obliged to you my dear John for your giving me some comfort that if I were thrown out of the world you would give me some monetary assistance from home. You need not be frightened for my throwing up my billet with Robert. I will stick to it as long as I can and I daresay he would be as sorry to lose me as I would be to go but it does not do to be entirely destitute and the powers of evil keep a very strict watch on a man when they see things going wrong with him. On the Saturday night that I was requested to sign a dissolution of

partnership and when I felt as low as I could feel I went out in the evening to take my usual walk down Bourke Street and I think all the devils out of hell went down the street with me and wanted me to jump into the Yarra. They suggested things to me and at last they seemed to be actually talking with me. I went down as far as the river side firmly determined to do myself no harm and when I came to the falls bridge I halted and said Awell you're the wrong kind to be among gude nicht callants[181] and steadfastly pursued my way back again. I think I was never more sane in my life and had not had any liquor for weeks and months before. I can easily understand how people come to drown themselves though; when a man is very low in spirits the evil spirits suggest that he has lost everything here, and will never get up his head again, and that all he has to do is to go to the next world where there will be a fresh shuffle of the cards and he may hold a big hand of trumps. I have a great deal of doggedness in my composition and this kept me from giving ear to them. If Willie had been at home I would not have felt it so much as he while going straight to the point is very gentle and would have made the intelligence fall as gently as possible whereas Robert went at it as straight as a cannon ball and equally brutally. It seemed to me as if the almighty had deserted me altogether seeing that the £1000 that I had made in the Melbourne firm had gone and been swallowed up in the insatiable maw of the Ballaarat business and left me without a penny then Robertson wrote me threatening to make C & J Smith pay the debt incurred by James to the bank at Ballaarat which sounded my death knell in the firm of C & J. Between you and me James had managed to get through a great lot of money in bad debts apparently at Ballaarat. The place seems to have been rotten.

[*a page of the letter appears to have been lost*]

… amount is £3-6-8. I do not think I would give it up yet as Jim was always a favourite of mine and a pleasant fellow, and a good crack, as distinguished from his brother Gideon. James and I used to reckon that James Turnbull would maintain his position as a loafer ~~longer~~ about a house longer than any other man from his genial ways and his easy going doings without getting his rear kicked out of it.

Do you know anything of Tom Turnbull. I have heard nothing of him for years. Gideon is at a place named Moothumbil post town Euabolong NSW[182] where he has been for some months past and asking if a letter was come from

---

181 In Scots, this literally means 'good night boys'. Adam's meaning is unclear, but he was perhaps referring to suicides.

182 Moothumbil was a sheep station in the district of Cobar, *c.*100 km north of Euabalong, New South Wales.

Mr Haddon a Hawick attorney for him.[183] Poor beggar he seems to be going always further and further back and I think he is almost back to Queensland now. This £200 legacy will bring out his jay feathers again.

I must pull up now as time is running on and with love to Agnes and yourself and to your belongings. I am

My dear John,
Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

76. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
20 February 1878

My dear Cousin,

I thought by this mail to have reported the final winding up of affairs at Ballarat but a little delay has taken place with the lawyers, however we are passing things on as quickly as possible and hope everything will be settled by next mail. I have seen Mr M W[*illegible*] manager of the bank and arranged with him to wait quietly till everything is wound up which he is going to do and as everything else is amongst ourselves there need be no more trouble and difficulty about it.

We have arranged that Robert and I shall be sureties for Mrs James as she cannot net in the letters of administration till this is done and at the request of the lawyers I had to ask her to sign a letter to prevent misunderstandings specifying what acts she would perform as administratrix before we became her sureties for them, she signed the letters but wrote me a most intemperate letter about it in which she complains of being ignored whereas Adam virtually spent half his time with her at Ballarat and consulted and advised with her on everything.

With reference to Violets very generous proposals you already know my resolution so far as I am concerned and with reference to the Darnlee Trust it seems to me that from the first the advance a/c in my brothers [*illegible word*] was what is called a doubtful account and eventually turned out worse than was expected, but this is counterbalanced by some of the other assets and investments having turned out much better than was expected, and so the Trust estate today, after deducting the loss in the advance a/c, is really more valuable

183 Andrew Haddon was a partner in Haddon & Turnbull, solicitors, High Street, Hawick.

than when we as Trustees came into possession of it and so long as this is the case no one can possibly find fault.

It is proposed to sell the remaining Ballarat property in the 6th of the month when I trust they will sell well. The Newington shares are not quite so good as they were having fallen from £4 to £3 – however they may rally again although mining is very precarious property.

There have been some splendid rains here lately putting farmers and squatters in good spirits.

Trusting you are all well (as we are) and with kind regards. I remain

Your affectionate cousin,
W. Smith

77. FROM JOHN SMITH TO ADAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
14 March 1878

My dear Adam,

I am in receipt of yours of the 24th January last inclosing draft for Twenty Pounds 11/ [*interlined*: £20 11/] and which I placed to James Turnbulls trust account derived as stated from

Colonial dividend	£16-18
Balance of Gas dividend	5
	21-18
Commission and exchange 10/	17
Commission on 14 formerly sent out	£21. 1

I am glad also to have your acknowledgement of the £100 sent out for J. Turnbull in April. You will have a reminder or two in my late letters which I could not of course avoid. We trust that William Smith will not be long in getting the Ballaarat business wound up, but I know well it cannot be done all at once.

I inclose a copy statement of sister Jane's funds made up by brother James from a paper remitted by you while he was in this country. It may be required in the re-arrangement of her affairs.

John Smith

78. FROM JOHN SMITH TO WILLIAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
14 March 1878

My dear Cousin,

Thanks for yours of the 23rd January last duly received. I trust that before long you will get the affairs of Smith Brothers finally wound up. Certainly you ought not to be losers either yourself or your brother by that firm and we will be sorry if you do not make proper provision for this according to sister Violets desire. You have had enough of anxiety and trouble on their account already and my sisters and myself feel grateful to you for all you have done in their interests. [*interlined*: and your much kindness to them in years gone by]. Mrs James will now I hope be on her way home as her ill advised action has so much complicated the difficulties of the situation.

You will now have received the power of attorney from sister Jane and it will be a great satisfaction to her if you can get the means she possesses in the colony put on a better footing in a form where they would be under her own control and where she could draw the interest in this country or in any way that you consider most advisable.

I called this afternoon and saw your mother – she had been a little colded [*sic*] but is a good deal better and was sitting in the dining room on the sofa. Lizzie also was downstairs and some better. Violet has not been very strong but she is also improving and going about.

Your affectionate cousin,
John Smith

79. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
20 March 1878

My dear John,

I duly received yours of the 17th January and was glad to hear that there were no events happening but that everything was going on as usual on your side of the planet. We are getting along here better now Willie and Robert Smith became bondsmen for Mrs James and the letters of administration are now granted and the deed of sale of the yard is signed. She talks of going home as soon as she can get a ship now and wanted to go home in the Chimborazo and lucky she did not I think for it went ashore at Jarvis' Bay in going round Sydney.

I was up at Ballaarat last week and offered two other properties for sale they did not sell on the day of the sale but there are people wanting them one of them has been since sold and there are some shuffing after the other one.

James Turnbull has been very fortunate in his investments. We bought Colonial Bank stock and Melbourne and Collingwood gas shares with the first money that came out and Melbourne Gas with the last £100 that came out as they have all improved in value very considerably. I shall enclose Willie's estimate of their value by which you will see that what with the increased value of the shares and improved dividends Jim is in a thriving way. The paper is out in the safe but to the best of my recollection the prices of the day shew them to have increased four hundred pounds or so in value and Willie estimates the dividend at £96 a year in future. They are the best stocks in Victoria and if wanted could be all sold in a day. I mention this to shew by their easily convertible nature their mercantile value. Having thus prefaced my subject I enclose a bank draft at sixty days for £43-13-6 made up as follows

Collingwood Gas Dividends	£12-10
Melbourne ditto with the last £100 worth of shares included and increased dividend	32- 0
	£44-10
Cost draft at 60 days	16-6
Amount of draft	£43-13-6

I am very much obliged and feel very grateful to you for interesting yourself with the welfare of my children. There is nothing I would like better my dear John than to have my son brought up at or near Darnick and indeed my daughters too but I have a little difficulty in managing my wife and her stern northern nature does not see things through the same medium that I see them. I wrote to her by the last mail desiring her to send Charles to you but she will do that or not as she likes and as she has not much money to sport on she will likely wait till after a monthly remittance reaches her. She wrote to me that she went over to France as it was cheaper living there but I would like the young ones to learn the catechism and all of them to read the bible. I must just wait and see how things turn out. If you are tired of administering to the affairs of James Turnbull I need not say that I share the feeling to its fullest extent. We have had a lot of him. He boarded in every hotel from end to end of Ballaarat and never paid one cent to any of them and as most of them knew he was our cousin we had no end of applications to stump up for him all of which we declined. One man named Stephen Brabner[184] who has got a large family asked me the other day to represent his case at home and get power to pay it.

[184] Stephen Brabner was a hotel-keeper in Ballarat.

I am deeply thankful to Violet for sending me £100. I will lodge it in the bank and if I need it not otherwise I will draw some of it and use it. I have been haunted by the fear that if I left the business here I would have done something rash to myself as I would have no means of living but this £100 will pay my board for more than a year and if times improve with me I will send it back to Violet again.

Willie has got a settlement of the difficulty with Mrs James. Tom was the man who was advising her to contest the possession of the Life policy. I met him one day and asked him if he would be one of her bondsmen to get the matter settled which he at once declined and he said that as she had nothing to administer to he would not recommend her to go on with it after consulting the one solicitor he said that if she could get bondsmen she would have to administer as Judge Molesworth[185] would compel her to go on she having already obtained letters from the court and only wanted bondsmen. Willie then wrote to her and asked her to administer in the interest of my sister with Robert and him for bondsmen which after consulting Tom she agreed to do. Willie then forwarded a paper for her signature authorizing him to receive the life insurance policy from the company which she signed and returned with an indignant letter that she was acting for my sisters' interest and that she would not have touched one penny of it all of which statement neither Willie nor I credit. Look out for her John when she comes home and you will see how deftly she will defame Willie and I neither of whom ever occupied a place in her affections. Willie remarked to me this morning that she'll let us have it very nicely when she gets home. She does not abide by the truth and she will go over the ropes and try her best with apparently praising us up to leave a sting behind. She has had a deadly hatred at me since ever she came to Australia and I find I have done my wife injustice as she always told me that Mrs James was such as I have found her to be and I thought it was not the case.

I must pull up however as it is getting late. I have been only middling well this last month owing to the presence of electricity in the atmosphere however I keep hobbling about.

I forgot to say that in her last letter to Willie Mrs James wrote that she gave up her claim on the life policy. Willie wrote back that she could not give up what had no existence and that she never had a claim.

Good bye my dear Brother give my kind regards to Agnes and to all your sons and daughters and believe me to be

Your affectionate brother,
Adam Smith

I am as hopeful of the Newington as ever.

---

185 Robert Molesworth was a judge of the Supreme Court of Victoria.

80. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
15 April 1878

My dear John,

I have only time to write you a few lines as it is now late in the evening but as I am not very well at present I merely want to shew you that I am still in the land of the living although I have been confined to my bed and the house for the last week by an attack of Erisypelas[186] in my left foot and although I am up again I do not feel very bobbish for work.

Mrs James is selling off her furniture tomorrow and by her request I took a passage for her in the Durham which goes by way of the Red Sea and sails about the beginning of next month some time. I hope she will have a good sale. She has told the Robertsons who have given it out in Ballaarat that I have behaved unkindly to her as big a lie as ever was told. I took Willie's side all through and she knew it and I shewed her where she was wrong but she pinned her faith to Tom Smith's tails and fell in the mud. Then she abuses me and also Willie. I have only to say dear Brother that any bad story she tells of either of us is a downright lie as neither of us are men that will do anything that is not right and she is first rate at misrepresenting with a smiling face. She will leave Ballaarat with no friends but the Robertsons and the Waldies behind her while I have hundreds, and I do not believe any of them will believe a single bad thing against me. You might put my sisters up to this as it is with them she will begin to work and there is nothing that I have done ~~with~~ during my long connexion with James that will not bear the strictest investigation nor anything that Willie and I have done that will not stand overhauling. I do not like to say much more about Mrs James but think it only right to say that she has hated both of us for ten years and could not help showing it newly after landing besides she is a most plausible woman. My wife was a woman of too brave a spirit to tell a fib as she was quite ready to answer for herself but you watch this one and see.

Willie is very well he has gone up to Charles [*interlined*: George] Mills for a day or two. I am very glad that I have him for a friend in this matter as he is quite ready to write home and back me if necessary.

Robert and his wife are well and so is their wee lassie. I hope that my little callant is with you by this time and going to school in my native parish. Write me what you think of him my dear John and if he looks like a boy to make something out of.

---

186 Correctly Erysipelas. A skin infection.

Good bye my dear Brother and with love to my sisters when you see them [*interlined*: love to your bairns] believe me

Your affectionate Brother,
Adam Smith

81. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
13 May 1878

Dear John,

I am glad to say that we have now settled with Mr Shann[187] the manager of the Bank here and got a full discharge of Smith Bros a/c. I induced him to make some concession about equal to them charging 7 per cent interest of 10 per cent interest on the overdraft all through. The house was conveyed to the bank at the value of £800 and I gave them a cheque on Violets a/c for £1300 and got Janes shares transferred into her own name and the bank will forward her the half years dividends as they accrue. I declined to negociate [*sic*] with Robertson as although in the presence of Adam, Robert and myself he said that the bank held no security whatever he afterwards denied saying this and said that he held the shares as he believed the 23 shares in Adams name were his own and not in trust for Jane although the dividends had been sent thro' the bank to her every half year and that he presumed Adam was making a present to Jane of the dividends an absurdity that I cannot believe – besides he and Mrs James acted in concert against us all through in these matters after she gave him the deeds.

I enclose a copy of the statement of assets which had to be rendered to the Supreme Court (not made public) on which I have made a few explanations in red ink for your benefit. The only unsold asset is Adams house which has been trust at auction but neither then nor since has the auctioneer been offered more than £375 and I am afraid we will have to take it. The Newington shares have improved in value as gold has now been found in small quantities and if £5 could be got for them I think it would be a good sale but it is very difficult to decide as any day a rich reef might be struck while on the other hand the present one might be poor and the shares would fall. Adam is now and always

[187] Richard Shann was the assistant manager and accountant at the head office of the Bank of Victoria, Melbourne.

has been more sanguine about this mine than I am. In the meantime we have to pay a £15 call the third I think within six months.

The Ballarat Gas shares are now transferred to Janes name and the company will forward the dividends to her when due.

Adam is keeping pretty well at present and Robert and he are pretty bussy [*sic*] in the yard. I am glad to say that we are all well and with kindest regards to my cousins. I remain

Your affectionate cousin,
W. Smith

P.S. The bank have just informed me that as there is a clause in the power of attorney sent by Jane prohibiting my making any investments in her name without her authority in writing these shares must be put in my name till she writes a letter authorising them to be put in her own, so that it would be well to have this done. I think it a good fair investment. Her £2000 worth Gas Debentures give 6 per cent and about 8 could be got at present on mortgage and 7 in Bank of New South Wales shares which are good. Gas shares are rather high to buy at present and I sold 200 of them at £6.18/ in Johns estate to pay the £1300.
WS

[*The following statement was appended to the letter. As well as copying out the original statement, William Smith added his own notes in a red ink.*]

Copy Statement of Assets and Liabilities in the estate of the late Mr James Smith as proved in the Supreme Court by Mr Adam Smith on [*blank*] February 1878. [*added in the same hand but in fainter ink*: and shown to Mrs James]

Assets		
House in Lyons Street in which James Smith lived the same being partnership property (taken by bank at £800)	£700	– his half £350
House in Lyons Street in which Adam Smith lived the same being partnership property (best offer £375 unsold)	£500	– his half £250
Allotment of land in Danna Street – partnership property sold at £145	150	– his half 75
Timber yard in Doveton Street – partnership property (sold at £1530 – less auctioneers commission)	£1530	– his half 765
Life Policy £1192 received less £17.10/ premium paid		1134
494 shares in Newington Mining Company – partnership at 40/ Fluctuate from 50/ to 90/ per share	£1212	– his half 606
Furniture in Mr James Smiths house (sold at £325 and received by Nov)		200
		£3380

Liabilities	
Amount owing to Wm Smith & rs (including interest to April 77)	£7184
Amount owing to Bank of Victoria (including interest to June 77)	2280
Amount owing to C & J Smith (£150 since paid)	350
	£9814

Note – the above statement does not include stock in trade sold and book debts collected from September 77 to February 78 which paid the liabilities of the firm with the above exceptions. The following sums were also paid viz. to Mrs James Smith for

Household expenses at £5 per week	£127
Funeral expenses	15.09
D[*illegible*] expenses	15. 4
Calls on 40 Newington shares belonging to Mr James Smith	3.01
Papers	8.16
6 rustic drapes for mournings	23. 7
Settle [*illegible*] a/c	2. 6
Outstanding small a/cs	20
Passage money per Durham by W. Smith	78.15
Mrs Smiths lawyers a/c to be paid	36
	£329.18

82. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
14 May 1878

My dear John,

After rummaging all my preserves I cannot find Thomas Boston's address and I have sent a letter containing a draft for the amount of money his brother left to your care which please to forward to him as soon as you get it. Thomas Boston has been very lucky there seemed to be but a poor chance of his meeting the bill I mean his late brothers partner when a horse he had backed at long odds win [*sic*] the champion race and Gill win £2500 on the event he stood to lose £60.[188] Verily it is an ill wind that blows nobody good and Thomas Boston has been the reaper of the benefit.

188 For John Boston, see Note 111.

I am better than I have been and able to work again. Mrs James sailed on the 4th in the Durham may joy go with her. If she says anything bad of Willie do not believe her it is not true or of me. Write to me before you believe her and I will write to you the plain unvarnished truth of any event. She has wonderful inventive powers.

I am glad little Charley is with you. Tell me what sort of a boy he is in your next letter after this I will send home some money as soon as I can scart any together which is a difficult job with me.

Yours in haste,
Adam Smith

83. FROM JOHN SMITH TO WILLIAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
4 July 1878

My dear cousin,

Thanks for your letter of 13th May last with [*interlined*: enclosed] statement of assets and liabilities in my [*interlined*: late] brother James' estate. We are glad that you have settled satisfactorily with the bank and that everything is in the way of a final settlement. We are sorry to think you have had so much that is disagreeable in addition to all the work it has caused you, but I hope matters will now go in more pleasantly since Mrs James is away.

I enclose a mandate from Jane empowering you to invest any of her means in her own name. ~~Do you not think the~~ She seems to like the Government Debentures, tho' the interest is somewhat less than [*interlined*: you quote could be had] in mortgage should the Ballarat Gas shares not be transferred to something else now. She seems to think the sooner the connection with Ballaarat is cut now the better but you know best.

Dr Smith is staying with us just now for a while – he is very brisk. He and I went up the other evening to take tea with your mother. She was wonderfully brisk tho' not very strong poor body.

With kind respects in which Agnes joins.

Your affectionate cousin,
John Smith

84. FROM JOHN SMITH TO ADAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
4 July 1878

My dear Adam,

I received yours of 14th May last and also one addressed to Thomas Boston to my care. I forwarded this to him the next day when I got his address which is Balmuick Comrie. I am glad to hear that you are well and able to work again. Jane is disappointed that you do not make mention of the copy statement of ~~sister Janes~~ her affairs sent out [*interlined*: by me] I think with the mail and which was given her by James when he was home that included £1100 Collingwood Gas Debentures but [*interlined*: which] Willie [*interlined*: Smith] in his notes on her investments does not take notice of ~~but which~~ She expects they still [are] a part of her means and estate in the colony otherwise it would be a very serious loss and cripple her too much. She understands that the money she had forgiven the firm [*interlined*: and yourself] were the sums of £598 for Adam Smith and £487-16-7 for Smith Brothers making nearly £1100 which she was aware you [*interlined*: ~~knew~~] had of hers. Before writing to Willie she would like to hear as to the Collingwood debentures and please to write per return of mail. We have heard that the Durham ~~is in~~ but have heard nothing save the bare fact that Mrs James has arrived.

I am glad to say we are all well. Dr Smith is staying a while with us at present and is brisk. Your little Charlie is getting on first rate and is a very fine little chap. We all like him greatly and he seems to enjoy himself much his holidays are just at hand when he will go to his mother for a while.

John Smith

85. FROM THOMAS BOSTON TO JOHN SMITH

Balmuick, Comrie
4 July 1878

My dear Sir,

I was favored yesterday with yours of the 2nd accompanying letter from your brother Adam to me which had been addressed to your care. Yesterday happened to be my 41st birthday and the Australian letter and bank order which it included came very appropriately on that day. Adam doesn't write often. I

think the last letter I had from him was dated June 1875. I was a little afraid Gill (my late brother John's partner) might not meet his acceptance when due and Adam had been something of the same way of thinking. However all's well that ends well.

I am glad to say wife and bairns are all well. We have 3 children at school now – that is the half of our number. It is astonishing how quickly they grow up. But it will be some time yet before any of them can look over my shoulder. I am glad to see you and yours are all well at Leaderfoot.

Kate joins me in kind regards to Miss Smith and yourself. Believe me, my dear sir,

Yours faithfully,
Thomas Boston

86. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
9 July 1878

Dear John,

As Adam told me today he did not think he would be able to write by this mail owing to his right arm still being [*interlined*: a little] effected by rheumatism, I thought it as well to let you know that we have been unable to sell the cottage at Ballarat which prevents a final account being made up, however the house is let and bye and by will be sold and in the meantime everything else is settled. Although Adam had rather a sharp attack this time he is now ~~about~~ [*interlined*: almost] in his usual state of health and proposes going up to Sandhurst and round by Ballarat tomorrow, he finds that a few days up the country does him a great deal of good.

As the half years dividends came in at the end of this month I was thinking of afterwards making up and sending you a statement of the Darnlee Trust a/c as I am in a good deal of doubt what to do about the Newington shares as it is quite a lottery and any day circumstances over which we have no control might send them up to £10 or down to 10/ the present price is about £4-15/.

Charles Mills has been staying with me for the last week – he reports them all well at home and looks so himself. We are all well here and with kind regards to Jane Violet and Agnes. I remain

Your affectionate cousin,
W. Smith

87. FROM WILLIAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
2 October 1878

Dear John,

I enclose bank draft for £89.1/ in favor of Jane as per enclosed memo showing the commission of the £2000 Debentures into 40 bank of New South Wales shares and also the £50 dividend on the Ballarat Gas shares. I still think the bank shares decidedly better than the debentures, just because they give instead of £120 a year in debentures £140 with a prospect of increase, and also being safer as debentures might be lost or stolen like bank notes, whereas these shares are in her own name in the Banks register and if the scrip were stolen or lost it would be of no use to anyone else. This is considered one of the best banks in the Colony.

I managed with both the banks to send to Jane at Weirhill place the dividends as they become due every half year, and now enclose the scrip for the 23 Bank of Victoria and the 40 Bank of New South Wales shares.

I observe your remarks about dispensing of the 100 Ballarat Gas shares, but you will observe that they have now increased. The dividend from 8½ to 10 per cent and although they have not done so yet they are sure gradually to rise in price in the same proportion, but it will take a little time, and I think it would be a pity to sacrifice them by the selling too quickly. I have not sent you the scrip of these, which are in her name at present, in case of selling.

We have not yet been able to sell the cottage at Ballarat which is let at £3 per month.[189] Adam who is up country at present was going to see about it on his way home, but I wont see him till tomorrow, he is keeping pretty well now.

We are all well here and trusting that [you] are so also. I remain

Your affectionate cousin,
W. Smith

P.S. The Newington shares have had nothing to affect their value yet, but they intend very soon to test the richness or otherways of the stone taken out but in the meantime a £15 call is due.

189 The cottage was on Dana Street, Ballarat, in a large allotment that had been used by Smith Brothers as a timber yard.

88. FROM JOHN SMITH TO WILLIAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
21 November 1878

My dear cousin,

I duly received yours of the 2nd October last containing bank draft in favor of sister Jane for £89/ ~~and which I~~ also the scrip for the 23 Bank of Victoria and the 40 Bank of New South Wales shares – all of which I have handed to her. She desires me to thank you very warmly for the trouble you have taken in these matters ~~and I have no doubt they will suit. The dividends~~ It will suit her well to draw the bank dividends here as they become due. There has been an awful panic over bank shares here lately since the failure of the City of Glasgow but no doubt on your side of the world the liability of the shareholders will be limited to the amount of their shares.[190] In gas too there has been a panic owing to the electric light but I think it will calm down and you will just exercise your judgement As to the sale of Janes shares [*interlined*: if you have a favorable opportunity] you might dispose of them but she has thorough confidence in your judgement in the matter.

Etc.
John Smith

89. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
29 November 1878

My dear John,

This is the morning the mail goes and I am glad to be able to report myself gaining ground although both my arms and legs are easily fatigued. I can get through my work without letting anyone know that I feel as if I would like two Sundays in one week.

As regards how accounts stand with Jane when James was home and our account was overdrawn at the bank and another manager in the place of Robertson the Collingwood gas company sent the £1100 which was due for

190 The City of Glasgow Bank had collapsed in October 1878. Most of its 1,200 shareholders were ruined because their liability was unlimited.

debentures up to the bank at Ballaarat: the day before it was to be sent I called on Smith the bank manager and told him that it was coming and that I was going to send it home by the next mail to my sister to whom it belonged and arranged with him that it was to be a special deposit and that he was not to impound it for our overdraft £140 or thereabouts. He agreed to all this and promised to me to do so but when it came up he put it to Smith Brothers' account and although James and I tried our very best to reclaim it afterwards we never were able to as the business got so much cut up by competition that we could not hold our own. I told William Smith and Robert about it before I came down to Melbourne but the day after James funeral Mrs James told Willie that it had happened with me and not with James. Willie said it was all one and was in the usual course of business. Mrs James seemed to think I had got some advantage by it instead of which I had no shadow of one but it was the expenses of bringing her out to the colony that overdrew our account. James paid the interest of it from the Ballararat business as long as he lived now I have no means of doing so.

In a year or so it will be paid off however as the Newington Company will pay it we have a large lot of shares in it and to all human appearance if the shares are held they will pay our debts and leave something for me and my children if we live or for them if I do not (It is a large concern).

You have had Mrs James staying with you, if she has any bad stories of me told with an innocent air and a melancholy face they are all lies. I never behaved badly to her and far less to James with whom I had no secrets. She told Mrs Robertson that I was a bad man. No one is good in God's sight but in my relations with men and women I am as square a man as you can ever meet and a much higher style of man than she had been in the habit of of [*sic*] associating with [*interlined*: except James] her humble origin could not be altered because she married above her, and she retains the feelings and tone of the class she belongs to (an agricultural labourers daughter) in all their entirety) [*sic*] although she has a vast depth of cunning no end of malice some cleverness and a coat of varnish over them all as is s~~h~~ure to be the case with an inferior brought up near a big house.

Willie is more concerned than I am at what she says of him and I have heard her many times say everything that is bad of him. I am much more able to judge of men than she is and there is no one in Australia for whom I have half the respect or so warm a feeling of attachment as Willie. He is one of the Almighty's gentlemen, and his accuser, Mrs James, we will leave her alone! I always feel sorry for her being James' wife. Willie asks that you will let him know if there is anything that she states that makes him look as if he had done something bad and if you will let me know of anything that needs explanation I will tell you the truth about it. Enough of her.

How is my boy getting along. I will try and send some money to get his photograph taken. Many thanks for your kindness to to [*sic*] him. With kind regards to my sisters.

Your affectionate Brother,
Adam Smith

90. FROM JOHN SMITH TO ADAM SMITH (DRAFT)

Leaderfoot
16 January 1879

My dear Adam,

Since I last wrote another year has dawned upon us and I have now the pleasure of wishing you a happy new year and many returns of the same to you and yours. I sincerely trust for all of us it may be better in every respect than its predecessor. 1878 has been a disastrous one for Scotland and will be long remembered as such.

[*The following paragraph has been boxed off by John Smith*]

I have [*interlined*: also] to acknowledge receipt of yours of 29th October last enclosing draft for £16-9/6 sixteen pounds 9/6 being J Turnbull's colonial bank dividend [*interlined*: in J Turnbulls trust]. There was not time to acknowledge it by last mail as I ~~suppose it would~~ think it came by the Southampton portion.

I ~~also~~ duly received yours of the 29th November last with explanation about the Collingwood Gas debentures. Jane is much disconcerted thereby and thinks she has been very ~~ill used~~ [*interlined*: much injured] ~~and certainly you should have made her cognisant of the circumstances at the time~~. I do think when you see the risks of trade and the responsibilities attending Trust investments which Scotland is [*interlined*: so heavily] experiencing in connection with the City of Glasgow Bank – it would be wise to send home James Turnbulls cash to Mr Elliot Galalaw to invest for him here. I cannot but feel very anxious about it as when your affairs are so far from prosperous. Jim's cannot be altogether safe ~~as in the case of the Collingwood Debentures~~ and for your own satisfaction and peace of mind as well as for mine you should realise it as soon as possible and send it home. We could get Jim to give a discharge and put it into Mr Elliots hands. Jim is still the old man and takes severe turns of drinking when he can get any money. He was much the worse of a turn at Silloth this autumn. He is often ~~threatening me with a lawyer~~ holding a lawyer over my head and I would

fain be quit of him. There are many who at his instance would not scruple to give as much trouble.

Your little Charlie has been rather unwell for a week lately he is suffering from a low feverish attack of cold which is very prevalent among many children ~~about Darnlee just now~~ [*interlined*: just now]. He was up spending a week's holiday at Darnlee lately and enjoyed himself greatly. He will I expect soon be all right again. He is abed yet but busies himself with drawing ships and pasting in little things in his scrap book. He is a dear boy and we are all very fond of him. He is very methodical and prompt with a quiet determination of character about him which I have no doubt will help him to get well on in the world and he needs no pressing to his lessons.

I think you might give him a letter now he has written you twice.

etc.
John Smith

91. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Melbourne
22 February 1879

My dear John,

I here with enclose James Turnbulls

Metropolitan Gas divided	£30-12
Draft at 60 days sight	£ 4-6
Amount of Draft	£30- 7-6

The Gas shares out here as well as at home have been very much lowered by the alarm caused by blowing about the Electric Light but as they have begun to rise again I suppose that the American man[191] who was to make that light the lighting medium of the world has not succeeded in doing so yet.

Willie Smith has taken his passage in the Garonne[192] which sails on the 14th of March from Melbourne for home he is going to take his boy with him so you will see him not long after you receive this letter. I suppose Tom will

191 In 1878, Thomas Edison had formed the Edison Electric Light Company with the aim of developing a system of electrical illumination that would compete with and eventually supersede gas lighting.

192 The *Garonne* was a steamship operated by the Orient Steam Navigation Company for the passenger and cargo trade between Britain and Australia.

be there about now. How is my little boy getting on. I had a letter from him which I was very much pleased with not long ago he writes capitally and expresses himself very well. All the letters I get from home speak very favourably of him which I may truly say cheers his fathers heart up which has not much else to do the same office for it.

We are building a new Exhibition building here just now for a grand corrobborree to be held in 1880 and people are all busy getting up things for it and the agent general is doing what he can to get the British Government at home to give its aid in sending out exhibits and foreign governments as well.[193] I hope it will do the colony some good as at present it is suffering a period of great depression which by the bye seems to be affecting all industrial nations over the globe. I saw an article in the papers saying that some savan [*i.e.* savant] was trying to connect these general periods of depression with the spots on the sun and I think there may be found to be something in it as the world seems to be governed and worked by fixed laws, now beginning to be ascertained, to the confusion of the old religious theory of Gods judgments.

Our present Ministry is a rum one and shows what may happen to a man in Victoria before the[y] got their present billets and big salaries you would not have trusted any one among them with 5/ yet they are all able men and clever although unscrupulous. Berry the Chief Secretary has gone to London to try and get the British Parliament to alter the constitution and although there is a great outcry made about his going yet there is "a small amount of bread to an intolerable amount of sack"[194] and I think it very likely he will succeed in some measure.[195]

All the ministry are men of the people in the most extreme degree and have most of them led curious and very chequered lives and the upper ten here have the utmost horror of them but they have got the people at their back and Jack being as good as is master here they get on swimmingly and are great favourites with the people. It matters little or nothing to me which side is in power.

I must pull up my dear John and with love to my boy and kind regards to all your household and the people who enquire after me [at] Darnlee, Rachelfield and Burnmouth. I am

Yours truly,
Adam Smith

---

193 The Melbourne International Exhibition was held from 1 October 1880 until 30 April 1881. It was the first officially recognised World's Fair held in the Southern Hemisphere.

194 Paraphrasing *Henry IV*, Part 1, Act 2, Scene 4.

195 The government of Graham Berry, premier of Victoria, had been at odds with the Legislative Council to the extent that a state of deadlock existed between the upper and lower houses of the Parliament of Victoria. Berry had gone to London in the hope that the British Government would amend the constitution of the colony so to reduce the power of the Legislative Council. He was to be disappointed.

92. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
21 March 1879

My dear John,

I received yours of the 16th January by the last mail delivered here, and can cordially second your wish, that 1879 may be better than 1878, which I am sure is much wanted now, by all classes of this community, as at present trade is very bad here indeed, and has been so for some time past. I have given up looking for any improvement so far as I am concerned in anything, as I have been fighting up hill all my life and am now getting old. However I have not lost sympathy with my fellow creatures yet, and for their sakes I hope times may be better than they are now.

William Smith sailed from Melbourne in the "Garonne", on Saturday last, with his little boy, and on Tuesday or Wednesday they ran aground on a shoal near Adelaide but I see by tonight's paper that they have got her off, and taken her back to Adelaide again. It is said that she is not damaged, and after being examined will go on her way to the Suez Canal.

Willie was the man who invested, or more truly, who recommended the investment of James Turnbull's money in in [*sic*] the stocks where it is. The Gas stock has gone down owing to the fright caused by the electric light; as he will be at home shortly after this letter you can speak to him about selling out and he will be able to tell you what the stock will fetch. Then write to me and if you wish them sold, I will set a broker to work, and sell out, and send home the money and will only be too happy to do it.

When I received your letter I told Willie the contents of it but he did not seem to like the idea of it. All stocks are dull just now out here and they would be sold at the very lowest figure. You had better talk it over with Willie.

The last piece of business that Willie did was to get a situation for James Turnbull of Windsor in the Colonial Bank and today he has got notice to go and commence operations at Tarnagulla.[196] He shapes better than any of our friends who have come out yet. He has taken a room for which he pays 5/ a week and grubs himself which as food is cheap in Melbourne is a first rate plan. He is a smart and likely youth. He gets a small screw[197] to begin with but will not remain long at that as they rise by merit in that bank. Willie behaved very kindly in the matter. He got two in before one a son of Russel's of Fergusson

196 A town in Loddon, Victoria, *c.*183 km north west of Melbourne.

197 Slang for wage.

Davidson & Co's[198] who was what may be called an ass on end and rather gay. Another one Rose of Edinburgh got his dismissal for wanting to get married to a cabman's daughter and when he did get married which on the screw he was getting was an act of lunacy his services were dispensed with. I scarcely liked to ask Willie this time.

I am much delighted to hear the account you give of my boy. I am very much obliged to you for all your kindness to him and I know you will be kind to the poor little fellow. I am naturally of a contented mind but there are very few days I do not wish myself alongside of my boy, he was so much attached to me and so was I to him and so am I. I hope the illness he had when you wrote did not trouble him long.

With love to all your family. I am my Dear John

Your affectionate Brother,
Adam Smith

93. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
11 June 1879

My dear John,

I received your letter of the 10th April by the last mail and were glad to hear that you are well including my son Charles.

I have just returned from the marriage of James Weatherly with Miss Wilson who came out with the Aconcaque[199] on the 8th. He asked me to give her away as the Presbyterian clergymen out here are not allowed by the laws of their church to marry couples holding the relationship that exists between these two although it is the law of the land.

They had therefore to go to a Church of England clergyman who "worked them off" in good style at the Cathedral Church so if you see any of Miss Wilson's friends you can tell them that I saw her get justice at the altar this forenoon. We came back to Menzies hotel to a fine lunch and they started by this afternoon train on their way to James's place meaning to break the journey at Ballaarat where they were to stop all night. James' place is a good long way

198 A firm of merchants in Leith.

199 Correctly *Aconcagua*, a steamship operated by the Orient Steam Navigation Company for the passenger and cargo trade between Britain and Australia.

from Melbourne about 200 miles or more but they have got a railway all the way.[200]

You came down on me very hard and somewhat intemperately in your last letter as I thought that Darnick people were foremost in all literature and kept up with the time of the day. Being somewhat downcast with the flagellation you gave me I went down to the church the following Sunday and heard our minister[201] lecture on the "Hebrew prophets". He said when he was lecturing on that passage [*interlined*: in Joel] which speaks of the ravages done by the locust, the caterpillar and the canker worm,[202] he said that it was important to notice that Joel though he was inspired to speak a message [*interlined*: from] on high was inspired for that purpose only and that he had only the ordinary knowledge of his day and consequently [*interlined*: held] the popular opinion that these plagues were God's judgments and consequently could not be prevented instead of which he said they only proceeded from natural causes and were preventible [*sic*]. That was not the way God dealt with the world. God's purpose apparently was the elevation of the whole human race not one or two here and there but the whole race of man. However I need not go on. You seem to have turned your back on science and its discoveries altogether instead of being like the new men working side by side with it.

Our minister preaches oftener on Christ than any other subject but I do not think anything would part him and science and he has shewn us that they do not need to be parted. It is found out to be a truth by Positive Science that man was living in Europe at the last Glacial Period which period is also estimated from scientific dates at 240,000 years [*interlined*: ago] that he was at that time living in a state very little above a brute. When you apply to the history of the creation the key to unlock it that Mr Strong does to Joel you can very easily see that your position is untenable. Hugh Miller the champion of Presbyterianism gave up the biblical account of creation before I left home and the science of Geology from which God's works can best be read has made immense discoveries and strides since his day.

I make a point of reading all new scientific books that I may keep my knowledge feeling assured that God would never want me to believe what is wrong and science cannot be wrong.

I am very glad that my boy Charles is getting along so nicely both with his lessons and his play which are about equally important at his time of life and it

---

200 At this time, James Weatherly managed the station at Mokanger, Victoria, for the aforementioned Chirnside. It lay *c.*250 km west of Melbourne. He was a native of Old Cambus, Cockburnspath, Berwickshire.

201 The Reverend Charles Strong of the Scots' Church, Melbourne.

202 Joel 2:25.

gives me much pleasure to hear of John Elliot's promotion to a J P ship[203] the young fellow seems to be doing well so much for a good start in life which I may here remark is another subject we will not agree upon.

We had two banks suspended payment here lately the first was a duffer but the second was better and there was the wildest excitement in Melbourne.[204] The banks here have no convertible securities that they can invest their reserve funds in and when a run comes on they have all to stand or fall luckily the first back a run was made on stood it out. Trade was bad enough before and this will make it no better.

Kind regards to Agnes and yourself and to you children and to my son Charles.

Your affectionate Brother,
Adam Smith

94. FROM JOSEPH NICHOLSON TO JOHN SMITH

Collingwood Timber Yard and Saw Mills
Albert Street, Melbourne
3 September 1879

My Dear Sir,

Our Mr A. Smith who is at present up the country,[205] wished me to forward you the enclosed draft on London being dividend on shares in the Metropolitan Gas Company in a/c with Estate of Turnbull viz.

Dividend	30	12-0
Bank Exchange		4-6
Bank Draft	£30	7-6

Yours respectfully,
Joseph P. Nicholson
for A.S.

[*The following was written in pencil in a different hand at the bottom of the letter.*]

---

203 *i.e.*, he was made a Justice of the Peace.

204 They were the Provincial and Suburban Bank, and the Australian and European Bank.

205 By this time, Adam Smith was working as a travelling salesman for C. and J. Smith.

Melbourne 3 September 1879
Sixty dys £30-7-6
For the Colonial Bank Australia
To the London Joint Stock Bank
Princes Street London

95. FROM ADAM SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

Ballaarat Saw and Moulding Mills
Doveton and Dana Streets, Ballarat
27 December 1879

My dear John,

I am still at Ballaarat yet winding up matters here and I send you a third instalment of James Turnbull's Gas Dividends £4-10 being all the money I have here.

I wish you many happy returns of the season which here is a sort of middling one. We want rain very badly but we want also good weather for the holidays and it is just hanging between the two.

I am still here winding up matters and have got them into a narrower compass now. I had sold the place that is the yard to a party who threw it up again. He had paid a deposit of £100 which he has forfeited.

Mrs James is sometimes middling well and sometimes not very. I think she is in much anxiety of mind poor woman about what will come to her; apparently she has very little other prospect just now than to take a situation as she has nothing but her furniture.

With love to all your family believe me my dear John

Your affectionate Brother,
Adam Smith

PART THREE
1891

1. FROM CHARLES L. SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

The Colonial Bank of Australasia
Carlton
2 February 1891

Dear Uncle,

I must thank you very much for your kind letter received by me such a time ago. You will think it worse than rude of me for not answering it, but I suppose having been away such a time from Scotland – and being such a youngster when I left it: twas [*sic*] no easy matter for me to start running in the former groove again.

My reason for writing to you now, is principally this – my mother has for some time past, tried ineffectually to see, or to get a copy of my late father's "will", and it seems to me very unsatisfactory that she is not allowed to see [*interlined*: it]. My minority came to an end last month,[206] and being of age now, I must ask you to forward my mother a copy, if the original cannot be sent; and should like one also myself. It will be much more satisfactory, as I fail to see why such a just demand on my mother's part was refused.

I hope you have had better seasons than when you wrote last. Do you think that sheep farming is better paying than crops. I am addressing this letter to Kelso, as the nearest town I can think of, is that right? Now I have just time to catch the mail. With all best wishes to you and yours.

Your affectionate nephew,
Charles L. Smith

2. FROM JOHN SMITH TO CHARLES L. SMITH (DRAFT)

Mowhaugh
28 March 1891

Dear Charlie,

I duly received yours of the 2nd February last making enquiry regarding your later Father's will – I think it is right and natural and reasonable that you should wish to know all about his circumstances and his business career, and I will try

[206] *i.e.*, Charles had reached the age of twenty-one years and so was able to act for himself in legal and other matters.

briefly to give you some information on the subject as far as I can recollect. Let me say first, that we never had any application from your mother for a copy of your Father's settlement. There was an enquiry made by a friend of hers to Mr Mitchell as to what provision your Father had made for her and it was explained to Mr Mitchell that he had not only left no funds but was deeply in debt at the time of his death. This being the case there was no provision broker and nothing to administer and the will therefore was of no account as far as money was concerned. I believe the will is in the safe at Church Hill House[207] and after your Aunt Violet returns from Cannes or sooner if I have the means of getting it, a certified copy will be sent to you which you can forward to your mother.

When your father and your Uncle James embarked in business as timber merchants at Ballaarat they had only a very small capital, but Messrs C & J Smith their cousins became surety for them at the bank for a very considerable sum. When mining failed at Ballaarat as it very soon did your father and uncle's business failed with it and they were for a number of years in great difficulties, and at your Uncle James' death the firm was bankrupt for a very large amount. Messrs C & J Smith because [of] surety [*interlined*: The Darnlee Trust lost I think £4000]. Your Aunt Charles[208] lost £2000 and your Aunt Agnes lost also a smaller sum. In order to save them going through the bankruptcy courts your Aunt Violet paid the rest of the debts which included a large overdraft on the bank and in this way the failure was not so generally known as it otherwise would have been. For some time your Father was a partner with Mr Robert Smith in the Melbourne Firm (while your Uncle James was [*interlined*: left to] carry on the Ballaarat business under very great difficulties) but during these years business was bad and your Father made nothing after the bankruptcy he was no longer a partner in the Melbourne Firm but Mr R Smith gave him £300 a year as traveller – this ceased in 1880 when Mr Robert Smith gave up business and your Father came home [*interlined*: to Scotland]. You will remember that you came to Leaderfoot and went to Highfield school with my boys your Father not having the means himself to educate you ~~after your Father had been sometime in this country he returned to Australia, when your Aunt Violet arranged with Mr William Smith~~ From that time your Father, his wife and family have been supported and the children educated by your Aunt Violet who was solely actuated by the desire that her brother's children should have a fair start in the world. Your aunt also arranged with Mr William Smith when your Father returned to Australia to put him into the farm of Chrichton,[209] she supplying the capital in the hope that he might be able to do something for

---

207 On the south side of Edinburgh.

208 *i.e.*, Charles Smith's widow, Jane.

209 Crichton, a grazing farm near Melton, *c.*40 km west of Melbourne.

a living, but he made nothing of it. This capital also was lost and by this time his infirmities were so increased upon him that he was not able for any business. During his tenancy of Chrichton a legacy of about £300 was sent out to him from his sister Mrs Dunlops estate. What he did with it I do not know but it was soon all gone.

S[?] that legacy he had not since he left Melbourne any means of his own but his wants were supplied by his sister your Aunt Violet though Mr William Smith who suffered him to lack nothing that could contribute to his comfort. He, Mr William Smith will be able to provide you with any more detailed information that you may require and explain anything further you may want to know bearing on your fathers affairs and business career.

You are now of age and [*interlined*: will be) able to take a business view of all [*interlined*: that] the foregoing statement [*interlined*: involves] and I am [*interlined*: sure] you will not ~~easily~~ [*interlined*: fail to] see, recollecting the ~~style~~ [*interlined*: manner] in which ~~(all these years)~~ yourself and your sisters have been maintained and educated [*interlined*: all these years that] it has cost your aunt not a little [*interlined*: fortune] but a ~~very~~ large one ~~sum of money~~ [*interlined*: to do it]. In addition to this your Aunt Violet ~~yet~~ [*interlined*: is] still continuing to give your mother ~~a voluntary~~ and sister Ula a voluntary allowance of a hundred [*interlined*: £100] a year while at the same time finishing your sister Violet at a German school.

I sincerely trust dear Charlie that you and your sisters will profit largely from the start you have got and get well into this world not forgetting to ~~have~~ seek first the kingdom of God and his righteousness believing all necessary things will be added to you.

Flora has I think begun well and is a capable active and accomplished young lady. [*interlined*: She also was finished off in Germany].

James and the girls Jane and Bessie join me in kind regards.

I am your affectionate uncle,
J.S.

[*The following was written on the facing, otherwise blank, page*: I told him also something about his cousins at Cannes and here]

3. FROM CHARLES L. SMITH TO JOHN SMITH

The Colonial Bank of Australasia
Carlton
1 June 1891

Dear Uncle,

I have your letter of 30th March, also one dated a week later, enclosing a copy of my later father's will, for which many thanks. There is one thing in your letter that puzzles me; in it you say that Messrs Mitchell & Baxter had merely an indirect inquiry through a friend of my mother's relative to what provision had been made for her; whilst my mother distinctly wrote me and told me, when I saw her here that she wrote several times to Messrs Mitchell & Baxter through her solicitor Mr Turnbull, to try and get a copy, but she was either refused, or no notice was taken of the communication. The last winter must have been a very trying time for you with the sheep, the weather being so severe. Kind regards to all at Mowhaugh.[210]

Your affectionate nephew,
Charles L. Smith

[*John Smith's draft reply to this letter is not extant, and the collection ends here*]

[210] The farm tenanted by John in the parish of Morebattle, Roxburghshire.

APPENDIX

In 1944 or soon after, Charles L. Smith (1870-1948), author of Letters III.1 and III.3, decided to write the story of his life. A typed copy of the first part of these reminiscences is all that survives. It is reproduced here by kind permission of Ann Gray, his granddaughter.

'My Early Youth'

I don't know exactly why I have been stirred up to write my life's experiences. Certainly not with the idea that they will be interesting to many people, but more for the benefit of my children if they should ever wish to refer to any part of my life. Personally, I have always been sorry that I did not know more of the history of my own parents, and I had not much opportunity, for I was parted from my Mother when entering my "teens", and I had not known my father up to that time – while for the next five years I was [at] boarding schools, and had only been in the Colonial Bank a short while, at his death. We were, I suppose, a happy family when in Ballarat (Vic.) before Mother decided that we must be educated at "Home", the girls particularly, at the schools where she herself had been through.

Anyway, Mother departed from Australia in the sailing ship "Hydaspis"[1] with Ula, Flora, Violet and myself. Ula would then probably have been about 8, Flora 5, myself 2 or under, and Violet under 6 months. I think Mother had a nurse with her. My first recollection of this world was in Melrose, Scotland, where Ula and Flora had been put to school (Miss Liston's).[2] Here Violet and myself had upset a box of "Cockles" pills[3] upon the floor, and had swallowed a number before we could be stopped. The result, I believe, was rather upsetting.

From Scotland, we – Mother, Violet and I (Ula and Flora left at boarding school, Melrose) moved to the vicinity of Bayswater,[4] where Violet and I attended a day and boarding school conducted by a Mrs Hays and her two elderly daughters.

The school fronted a large railed-in garden square, and was attended by a number of children from different parts of the Empire. To me, one of the most awe-inspiring sights was that of the vicar and his curate – both big, bearded

---

1 Correctly *Hydaspes*, a steamship that had been converted to a sailing ship.

2 Isabella and Sophia Liston's 'Establishment for the Board and Education of Young Ladies' was located at Laurel Bank, Melrose.

3 Cockle's Anti-Bilious Pills, the main ingredient of which was aloe.

4 A district of the City of Westminster, London.

men, and I could not distinguish vicar from curate, even when they visited together to take the Bible Classes.

Violet and I were day pupils at first, but a night arrived when we had both been invited to stay for tea, which we accepted. On some pretext or other Violet was kept away while I most unwillingly went off by myself. At the time I thought it was time to go home, I said "Good night" and made for the front door, which was barred. Then began a scene which lasted for some hours, I fell asleep and was put to bed. Just after that Mother arrived. It was part of the plot to leave me behind as a boarder, while my Mother took Violet to join Ula and Flora at the French Boarding School in Dunkerk.

Mother said afterwards that when seeing me asleep she relented, and wanted to take me with her, but the Hays prevailed upon her to let me remain. So, they left for France next morning. It is such a thing as I would never do to a child of mine, it destroys all faith in the one woman of all others in whom a child should have faith. I must have been about 6 years old then.

When school vacation arrived, I was put on board one or other of the two small-passenger-cargo steamers sailing from London Bridge to Dunkerque called "Lord John Russell" and "Sir Robert Peel". When coming into, or leaving port, the skipper would call out his instructions from the bridge to a boy on the deck below, who would then shout down to the engine room. These boats had no telegraph.

When the time came to send me over to France, I began at a small school close to the school where the girls were being educated. We had a house in Rosendael, the sea-side suburb of Dunkerque – the first house was a 2 storey [one] within a walled garden carrying a number of trees. My sister always had a woman escort going and returning from school. The escort had the usual dress: long black cloak covering red kirtle and white vest, with white coif.

Two cousins, Emma and Josephine Ross, from the Highlands were at the same school, and they, with a few invited French girls were allowed to come out for the week end.

The French pastry cooks were wonderful and upon these week ends a man would arrive with two large tins – akin to a hanging meat safe – containing pastry of all kinds. Violet and I were always on the watch to steal some of it before it could be put into use.

The bathing boxes at the sea side, in those days, had single or double compartments. If the tide was going out, the driver hooked his horse to the machine, and drew it out with the top step level with the water. Conversely, when the tide was coming in, the bathing box would be left at the water's edge. A small red flag was pulled up to summon the driver.

It was a wonderfully safe beach from which to bathe, and from any part, too. The bottom gradually shelved, while there was no current, I allowed my imagination full play when the evacuation from Dunkerque took place.

While upon the subject of bathing, of which I was very fond, I would refer to the fresh water moat outside the huge eastern defence of Dunkerque. Whenever I could find a companion who wanted to sail a toy boat or to try out any old sort of boat, I would cheerfully bathe. The house was not far from the moat, it lay just beyond the drill ground, where the troops commenced drilling about 6 a.m. The public freshwater baths were close to the draw-bridges leading into the town.

In winter-time I have skated upon the moat, and indeed took foolish risks with a "thaw" which brought the water up through the cracks in the ice, so that I was only saved from going through the ice by keeping moving. An excited throng grouped itself at the bridge to see my last half-mile home.

From the elementary school I was soon transferred to the big College Communal de Dunkerque – with about 800-900 boys – built in the form of a hollow square, it was fenced off to divide Senior and Junior Schools. Here my reception was as kindly as I thought it should be, for at recess I was manoeuvred into a corner, and the playful ones came at me with running kicks, while the masters looked on smilingly. I am afraid I hurt two or three at the first bout, and at the second recess produced a stout class ruler about 18'' long, with which I struck savagely for heads every time. That was the last of it. The masters interfered when they found that the others, and not I, were hurt. I quite enjoyed school thereafter, but found that I could talk French before I had learnt the grammar, in fact my self indictment still holds good.

From Dunkerque my mother took us through many different countries during the holidays, and as she was a wonderful linguist, she made us speak the language of the country.

Occasionally my Mother would strike trouble, when, for instance, a Mrs McDougall, two daughters and a son had been lodging at Rosendael for about 6 weeks the son gave out that he was in "The Guards". Their landlady waylaid mother, knowing she was "Anglais", to say that one of the girls was making herself ill with crying, the old yarn: remittance not arrived, rent not paid and tradesman also. Poor mother went to the rescue and guaranteed debts, she could never refuse a Highland family.

The son, unfortunately for me, heard that I had picked up a 5 franc piece and had it in my pocket. He persisted in taking me upon his knee and jumping me up and down, in spite of my protests, but he was 6 ft 2 in. Anyway before I was allowed to go, the cad had picked my pocket, and the next morning the whole family were gone.

Now comes my second invasion of Scotland. In previous years I had been taken to visit Mother's highland home, and the lovely highland scenery. Also we had gone to drink "Spa" at Strath Peffer, in those days just a pump-house,

while visitors secured rooms at surrounding farm houses. Now there is a "Hydropathic" I believe.[5]

My first trip was made from Dunkerque to Leith, the port of Edinburgh, where I was met by Uncle John, my father's oldest brother, who took me to live with his family at Leaderfoot farm on the banks of the Tweed River, and situated between the main railway bridge from England to Scotland and the vehicular bridge.

The Smiths were born and bred around the village of Darnick, a mile or two out of Melrose, and close to Abbotsford, and the school "Highfield House" was on the fringe of Darnick.[6]

The whole of the border was Walter Scott country and every foot of it to me and to most Scots is hallowed ground. Every tower, or fortified farm house, every burn, or glade, has some romantic association connected with it.

At School the two readers given me were "Robinson Crusoe" and Scott's "Tales of a Grandfather".[7] The latter book gave Scottish history in simple form, and I loved it; from then on I was committed to reading all tales and poetry of the border, and always with the keenest interest.

Thomas the Rhymer's glen was close to Darnick, also the Faery Dene, Alan Water, and, of course, Abbotsford. On the road to my Uncle's farm, situated on the banks of the Tweed just above where the Leader joins with the Tweed – hence, of course, "Leaderfoot". Only a short distance down the Tweed from here can be seen the old abbey buildings of Dryburgh, and it can be approached by the road to Saint Boswell's. Melrose Abbey is much too venerable a pile for me to attempt to describe it. I believe though that Smith's were buried there over 500 years ago.

Highfield was both day and boarding school, and there were some half dozen boys from the Empire's outposts.

I had two families of cousins; Charlie and John from "Darnlee" near Darnick, and Tom and James from Leaderfoot. They were from 6 to 8 years older than I, also at Leaderfoot dwelt three girls: Janie, Mamie and Bessie, the children of Uncle John, a widower, whose household was presided over by a maiden aunt Aggie. Aunt Violet was the mother of Charlie and John.

The school had pretty surroundings and was perched above the surrounding country. In front of the main buildings there was a pump house and below that

---

5 Strathpeffer, a village in Ross and Cromarty, was a popular spa resort during the Victorian period. The 'Hydropathic' mentioned by Charles was perhaps the Highland Hotel, which had been built 1909-1911 for the Highland Railway Company.

6 Highfield Collegiate School had been founded in 1870. A school guide noted, 'Classical and Commercial education, including Greek, Latin, German, French, Surveying, is given to 20 boarders, 30 day-boarders and scholars, from 9 to 16 years of age' (Dumaresq de Carteret-Bisson, F S. *Our Schools and Colleges, vol. 1 For Boys*, London, 1883, 950).

7 *Tales of a Grandfather* was a series of books by Walter Scott, first published between 1827 and 1830. *Robinson Crusoe* by Daniel Defoe was first published in 1719.

the playing fields, fenced and surrounded with a drive. Then came a lovely thick copse with trees of all kinds. The gardens were, of course, walled-in.

When events did not warrant the elder boys playing with me, I took refuge in the company of Mamie, a year older, and Bessie, a year younger than myself.

Saturdays was always a day to look forward to, whether it was taken up in looking far afield for the golden crested wren, or in gathering violets and primroses which grew in profusion on Tweed woodside in front of the house.

Other jaunts took us parading to one of the many crow or rook belts of pine trees in search of eggs. Upon one occasion Tom and James took me to one of these strips, and we each started to climb trees. Every tree might contain 6 or 8 nests, and I was soon satisfied. I was just arranging the eggs for safe carriage, with several under my hat, several in my egg-tin, a few in my pocket and trusting to luck, when the warning came that the game-keepers were upon us. I was down on the ground like lightning, but the eggs I had put in my mouth were broken and addled. So were those in my hat, which streamed into my eyes, and, of course, all the others were broken also.

It was no time for bewailing, and I ran in the direction taken by my cousins, until I saw I should be overtaken, then I ducked for a ditch and covered myself with leaves allowing the pursuit to pass. Later my cousins returned with their share of the spoil – three or more young crows – which we cooked and ate with gusto. Yes the English crow or rook is good eating.

The yard with haystacks was always well stocked and amongst them was a long rectangular stack through which children had burrowed crosswise and lengthwise, and I remember the first time that I was blocked there with boys ahead and behind me, and not being able to get out. I had a sense of being smothered. After taking up mining as a profession, I couldn't reconcile my actions with the inward dread I had of suffocation, for that is likely to occur when there is a fall of ground in the mine workings. With God's protection I came through.

They were wonderful days to me.

My mind was filled with the old Scottish lore, and the songs we sang twice a week for our singing master, I can remember most of them yet, though my book of songs was stolen from me soon after I arrived in Australia.

When the holidays arrived I was taken to Leith and put on board a steamer calling in at Newcastle (England) for a cargo of coal, and bound for Dunkerque – I was returned in the same way.

When my Mother and sisters came over, we would go down the west coast of England through Carlisle and on to Sileth,[8] on the Solway Firth, branching out to little hamlets. At one fishing village, Flora, Violet and I took charge of the "Toll" gate for one day, and it was busy and profitable. There, the tide raced in and out for a mile or so each way.

---

8 Correctly Silloth, a village and parish in Cumberland.

Relations between my father's brother and sisters (5) and my mother were very strained at all times. It began, I believe when my mother made some ill-advised remarks in her letters to my father, which he, foolishly, referred to, in writing to his sisters. My Mother was a very highly educated woman, [could speak] French, German, Italian, Spanish, and had a well trained voice. My father's sisters had only a Scotch country family education, and although they married well and were rich, nothing could take away the "rawness" in my Mother's eyes. Of course they bitterly resented her attitude of superiority and matters grew worse all the time.

Skating was a joy – Faldonsyde Loch, Colshiels Loch[9] and even the small lake at Abbotsford, only half a mile away from Darnlee. Occasionally we could get a stretch of ice on the River Tweed or the Leader. Sledging was almost as good, and the sled could get up a furious speed in the course of its way down a ¾ mile road. Any attempt to stay the speed would only meet with disaster by throwing the sled into the gutter, whereas by continuing on, the hay waggon and horses might be just shaved, with a lot of luck.

My Father came home from Australia in 1881, and landed in France; quite crippled with rheumatism. After a stay with us at Rosendael he crossed with me to Scotland, where he spent the winter in bed, when my mother came over to see him and myself she was not allowed inside the door.[10]

How hardly shall they that have riches enter the Kingdom?

As my Father's health was so bad, it was decided, by caucus, that it would be right for him to return by the long sea voyage by sailing ship taking with him Ula and myself while Mother stayed behind to complete the education of Flora and violet. Even up to the day of sailing from Greenock my mother tried to have this altered, and to be allowed to come to Australia – No luck!

The villagers at Darnick would welcome me gladly in my father's name. The Shetland pony I used to ride would be quite content to stay quietly when Betty Soandso called out Ay! here's little Maister Adam, come awa ben the hoose little Maister and taste ma cookies and ma bannocks.[11]

We seemed to have relations a-plenty on the Border, Elliotts (Burnmouth) and Little Jock Elliott of Song and Story,[12] Turnbulls, Carmichaels, Scotts (Hazeldean).[13]

---

9 Faldonside Loch and Cauldshiel Loch are *c.*4 km to the south west of Melrose.

10 Some breach between Adam and Eliza appears to have occurred, or worsened, around this time. In a trust disposition and settlement drawn up when he was in Darnick, Adam established a tutorial trust for his children and settled his estate (such as it was) on them.

11 Scots for 'Hello! here's little Master Adam, come into the [best room in the] house little Master and taste my cookies and my bannocks'.

12 John Elliot of Park was a sixteenth-century Border reiver whose deeds were immortalised in the ballad 'Little Jock Elliot'.

13 More commonly known as Hassendean, a village in the parish of Minto, Roxburghshire.

In the Highlands they were mostly Camerons – Ross, Bruce. My uncle Murdoch Cameron had the Cameron tree traced back to Cameron of Lochiel, and the Bruce to Robert the King of that name.

When Highfield House school, under Dr Mclellan, broke up for the summer holidays he made some rather touching remarks about "one who was about to leave us". I felt quite moved, thinking it was me he referred to, instead of my cousin Charlie, who was going up to Edinburgh University. The prize I received, I have it now, was for poetry repetition, and well I deserved it, for I could repeat half a page upon hearing it read over to me. And so, farewell to Darnlee with its lovely grounds, its green walks and bowling green, its walled in gardens. Farewell to Leaderfoot, a lovely Scottish farmhouse with its garden in front and cherry tree nailed to the walls.

When the tug boat had left the "Loch Tay"[14] at Greenock and we only awaited the pilot, I felt very small, very miserable, but very sentimental as I sang to myself the Scottish Emigrant's Farewell

> "Our Native land, our native vale,
> A long and last adieu,
> Farewell to Bonnie Teviotdale
> And Cheviot's Mountain blue"

and I wept unashamedly.

Tom of Leaderfoot was a merry red-faced boy who became a solicitor, went to South Africa and died there many years ago. James, a tall lad prevented anyone from bullying me, though glad to see me strive amongst my peers. He died about 3 years ago.

Janie (Mrs Johnston) had girls in India – Mamie married a widower, a Swedish ship owner and died some 8 years ago, and Bessie, she still remains to remind me of the past, though I never see or hear from her, unless my sister Violet or daughter Mavis has a letter asking for my address.

Of the elder people, Uncle John was a dear, so was aunt Aggie and they were very earnest. Aunt Violet was the beauty, mother of Charlie and John. She married her cousin, a rich man, and the two boys each obtained degrees at the Edinburgh University.

Aunt Jane dwelt by herself and had a companion, she was rich. Aunt Mary Elliott was very well off and had Jane and Mary Elliott as daughters. Another Aunt lived at St Boswells, I forget the name just now.

First Aunt Jane died, and her money went to Charlie and John, then Charlie died and John had all the money for a brief period. Upon his death Aunt Violet floated along comfortably until her time arrived, when James got

---

[14] The *Loch Tay* was one of a number of clippers operated by Messrs William Aitken and James Lilburn on the route between Britain and Australia.

most of the money, with the exception of some to another branch Jack McPherson Smith. Oh, well! They have all had a chance of fingering money, but myself, who never cared a cat's curse for money. Probably the foundation of health was laid down in Scotland for I developed into quite a sturdy youth.

On board "Loch Tay", there were 1st, 2nd and 3rd class passengers and I was the only boy, and therefore a pest. I used to climb about the rigging on calm days and one day I noticed 3 sailors look up and watch me for a minute. Presently they began to climb the ladder leading to where I then was, the cross trees.[15] I had a good look around and, just before they would be on my tracks, I let myself down to the poop on a backstay. Their game was to tie me up until my father "shouted" a bottle of whisky.

The cook's mate, a dirty looking little man became annoyed with something I had done or said, and wiped his dirty cap full of soot over my face in a caressing manner. I was the joke that time, but I had cook's mate always on the watch afterwards.

The ship's surgeon used to brew a jug of punch every night to enjoy with his familiars. There was the usual ventilator under the door, and I would lie down flat to see the position of the occupants, then bizz-z-z, I would get a blast of water through a squirt, jump up and make off some distance. However, the crime was fastened upon me, and I lost all my squirts, but obtained supplies from the Captain (Wm. Bennett). To stop pursuit I laid tacks about the door.

There were several concerts with numbers contributed by passengers and crew. Sports for the crew, such as race to the tip of the main mast, groping for a half-crown by mouth in half a bucket of molasses, and when the weary one gave up the chase, some handfuls of flour were dusted over to help the molasses to come off.

I was always fishing for birds and for fish, mostly thanks [*sic*]. The Stormy Petrel or Mother Carey's chicken could always be caught for examination with a bit of cork and black thread. The Mollymawk with a span of 7-8 ft was used to supply muffs with breast and back feathers. The Albatross, with wing span of 15 ft 6 in., was our largest. His feet were turned into tobacco pouches, wing bones for churchwarden's pipes, the head mounted for show, the beak into a snuff box, with breast and back for muff. We had to be careful in landing these birds, not only in dodging the powerful wings, but in protecting the breast feathers, for a seabird is always sick upon landing on deck, and it quite spoils the feathers on the breast for future use.

There was always a shark following the ship with its two striped pilot fish swimming just ahead of the snout. I think the largest shark caught and landed was 13' 6", though larger ones got away while being hauled over the railing. A good active man with the axe was required to chop the tail off, once landed on deck, before the fish started to damage things.

---

15 The cross-trees are the two horizontal spars at the upper ends of the topmasts of sailing ships.

One of the 3rd class passengers died while we were in the tropics, he was weak with T.B. and the great heat, while we were becalmed for some days, was too much for him. On the day of his burial two other sailing ships were seen at sunrise with their sails above the horizon, and although there was a dead calm in the air and a glassy sea, those ships had "ghosted" within a mile of the "Loch Tay" by midday, when the funeral took place – the result of ocean current I suppose.

One night we were hit by a sudden squall and the ship's main-yard touched the water. I was thrown from my top bunk to the floor.

The skipper Bennett went on deck one night and found the 2nd Mate asleep, so confined him to his cabin for some weeks. Another night my father went on deck and found the 1st Mate asleep. Skipper Bennett was a fine seaman. Some two years later when in charge of the Loch Vennachar he was present with Lloyd's Medal for Seamanship after having his ship dismast then rigging jury masts and sailing into Mauritius, where he put new masts in and re-rigged his ship in record time.[16]

The only land we sighted between Scotland and Australia was the Island of Tristan D'Cunha (about 12 miles away).

The voyage lasted 3 months all but 5 days and we landed at Melbourne on New Year's Day 1882. The sawmills my father had in Sturt St. Ballarat he had disposed of, also the saw mills in Victoria Parade, East Melbourne, and while waiting to take over a grazing property called "Crichton" 5 miles out of Melton (on the Melbourne-Ballarat line) we stayed first at hotels and boarding houses, while awaiting the lessee of "Crichton" to quit.

Meanwhile I was sent to "Scots College" E. Melbourne,[17] where my number was No. 1, and of course with my very broad Scotch accent I was always addressed as Scotchie. When the football season came in, I was asked if I could play, and I confidently answered "Yes!" The first practice game I secured the ball and bolted with it, thinking I was playing rugby, and was annoyed in being penalised, as we were playing Australian Rules.

As regards football, I have played soccer, rugby, and the Australian game, and plump decidedly for the latter, as being the fastest, least rough and altogether fairer than any of the others. The ball is nearly always in play, and a side adopting delaying tactics is penalised.

In my day, nearly everyone played games for all they were worth, and there were few lookers on, with the except of the "lame and the halt". In consequence every vacant space would be used after school hours for practice,

---

16 The *Loch Vennachar* was caught in a cyclone in the Indian Ocean in June 1892. The ship went down with all hands off the coast of South Australia in 1905.

17 Melbourne Academy was established in Spring Street in 1851 by James Forbes, a Scottish Presbyterian minister. By the time Charles was a pupil, it had changed its name to Scotch College and moved to a new site in Eastern Hill.

while on Saturday afternoons, match games were contested. Nowadays the few play, mostly professionals, while the crowd looks on.

To my mind the term "Sport" applied to anyone who is merely an on-looker is a misnomer. Even those who follow up racing are called "Sports" though they care nothing for that noble animal, the horse, beyond what he can win in bets for them. The truth is that crowds have lost the sporting spirit, e.g. they will hoot a Judge if he gives an adverse decision – (the Coalminers and other Unions will ask for a Judge of the Arbitration Court to be passed out, if his judgement goes against them).

A crowd will watch a policeman being knocked about when arresting criminals without offering any help, and sailors and soldiers, who under oath to do so, refuse help, in fact would sooner help the criminal – Enough said!

My Mother's brother – Murdoch Cameron, whom I met in France when he was enjoying long leave for health reasons, was a civil engineer in Tasmania. He came across to Victoria and died soon after.[18] My father arranged for his burial and my father's friend the Rev. Dr Robertson conducted the service at the house and immediately made preparations for leaving. "But you are going to the cemetery!" my father said. "Oh, no! I did not know the deceased in life," said the cleric. "Well, Robertson, if you won't come willingly, I shall take you by force. My brother-in-law was the son of a Scots clergyman, and deserves the last attention." The cleric was a hefty man, but he knew my father, and gave way. My father, by the way, in his youth in Scotland had a reputation for great strength, as I found out from the villagers.

In Ballarat he was a member of the cavalry regiment (volunteer). Unfortunately for him especially, he contracted rheumatism in a very severe form. He was out in Bullarook Forest near Ballarat looking for timber, and was overtaken by a deluge. It was then nightfall, and too far to return home, when he came upon a splitter's camp,[19] where he took refuge, and dried himself at the fire, without taking his clothes off, because the splitter's wife was there. That night changed him from being a hale and hearty man, to rather a wreck, and the pain never left him.

From what I can gather, he and my mother used to entertain relatives and friends, and my mother was induced to be matchmaker in more than one affair, where the swain was bashful.

By the way – the Teagues and Pascoes (Mrs J. H. Teague was a Miss Pascoe) lived near-by, and the children probably met. I used to chaff Docy in later years, saying that we had met when in our "prams".

Keeping us at "Home" for 10 years, with all our school and travelling expenses must have been a costly item, and I gather left my father a lonely man. To my mind, it was never justified, I mean our "Home" education, which

---

18 Murdoch Cameron died on 8 October 1883.

19 Splitter was an Australian term for a wood-cutter.

would have been quite good enough in Australia and would have kept us a united family, and would have saved the expenditure of large funds. However, judge not, says the Scriptures, and we all paid dearly for our overseas education.

I was removed from Scots College to Alma Road Grammar, St Kilda because a cousin of mine Jack McPherson Smith was there, and it had an excellent reputation for learning and for sports.

Henry Beresford de la poer Wall, who stood about 5 ft high, and was very broad in the chest to make up for height, was in partnership with Mr Gordon Robinson in running the school when I first arrived as a boarder. Later the partnership was dissolved and Mr Robinson carried on – a kindly, learned man. During one winter, all the boarders voted to continue sea-bathing, and we stuck manfully to it, in spite of rain and cold, although there was a walk of about 1½ miles to reach the baths.

A sad accident, which ended fatally, occurred in the spring. A tall youth named Percy Govett from Kyneton, Victoria, broke his neck while diving into 6 ft of water from the landing stage, which was then only 2 feet above the water. He evidently was trying to dive without using his hands. He came to the surface making grimaces and tearing his hair, twice, but those around only laughed, as he was rather a "joker". However, a man who did not know his ways, thought his behaviour peculiar, and dived in and pulled him out. I only saw him when rescued, as I had been swimming further up the baths with Govett's younger brother Harry, and giving him my shoulders to hold on to when he was tired. Percy lingered on for a few weeks while the paralysis gradually crept up. It was so sad to have one's dormitory mate taken.

I am afraid I thought more of sport than of learning. I always got over 60% in school exams which gave me 2nd class honours, but the added effort to improve my low average in mathematics was not forthcoming. I was more concerned in getting the teams to practise for cricket and football, especially football, and we won the premiership twice against some 10 school teams.

Amongst various drills, we had instruction in the Cadet Corps, and had a uniform of blue serge with the collar turned down for ordinary wear, while if the collar was turned up, it showed the red band underneath. A stiff cap with a glazed peak completed the uniform. Old military rifles, belts and bayonets were used.

A dancing class was formed after school hours, and I refused at first to join. However, I eventually did, and was the source of amusement to those who had had a few lessons. My progress was good though, and soon I was picked out for demonstrating all kinds of dances such as sword, hornpipe, country dances, cotillion. Mr Low was the teacher, but he more often sent his son and daughters who played their violin or acted as partners. It was one of the things I was thankful to have learnt, it not only kept my feet nimble, but was the means of paving my way into the best society, because I could be relied upon to dance every dance and enjoy it. Of course I had the entrée to many houses because

my relations were well known, and wealthy, while some people suspected that I might have some money, because my father was, or had been wealthy. It was the custom to give a day before the mid-winter holidays commenced for a paper chase. There were two hares and fast and slow pack of hounds. When I ran as a hare we had about 10 minutes start of the slow pack, and after running a mile I suggested to my mate that we should cut across a large vegetable garden being worked by some half-dozen Chinese. We got through all right to the accompaniment of many Whaffors! from the Chinese and ran on to a low ridge to watch results. The first pack followed the scent unsuspiciously until they had hopped the garden fence, a rickety affair; and then the Chinamen took a hand, and there was a wild scatter of the "hounds". We watched and laughed so much, that it was difficult to get into our stride again.

Years afterwards when I returned from Queensland I met my old master, Gordon Robinson, who was then an examination coach, a role much more suited to his temperament I should say, than in running a school. We met in Collins Street, Melbourne, and I made him happy by thanking him for all he had taught me, which had contributed to my successful rise in the mining world.

Scotch College, now situated in Hawthorn, Victoria was in my day on Eastern Hill by the beautiful Fitzroy Gardens. A retired cook, who had been employed at "Scotch" for years, had a "tuck" shop near the top of Bourke Street, barely ½ a mile away, but patronised by the boarders although distinctly "out of bounds". I remember Dr Morrison catching a youth who had returned, with pockets bulging – "Ye low blackguard, ye go away down toon without asking anyone's leave – I'll cane ye, I'll cane ye," and he did.

Schooldays were happy days, in spite of many changes; because of course, a new boy always had to fight his way in. In Scotland I had a feud with Eddie Kinsman, and we fought upon every occasion for the first six months after my arrival, then we settled down as friends. At Scotch College I had a feud with Tom Huntsman, and we fought every recess and after school for over a fortnight. You can imagine that we did not mark each other severely, or the elder boys would have stopped us. As I grew older, I fought it out to a finish within half an hour, and then "made friends".

I thoroughly enjoyed my holidays at "Crichton". Country life always appealed to me, and I loved open air; not content with my own riding horse, I was always keen to ride the more frisky mounts belonging to my father's overseer.

My father allowed me to go down to Queenscliff in the summer holidays, the first time in his company, and the second time – I was about 16 – by myself. I knew so many people staying at the Grand Hotel that the days passed pleasantly and the evenings were devoted to dancing, while on Saturday evenings the very large dining room was used for dancing after dinner to accommodate the influx of week-end visitors, who had come to join their friends.

I joined in a 4 in hand coach picnic to Point Lonsdale and another to Swan Island, where another military fort is situated and connected with Queenscliff by a very long gantry crossing the bay, which is only a mud-flat at low tide.

Then I wandered further afield to the Howard's place called "Melalenca" on the Connewarre lakes through which the River Barwon runs on its course to its outlet at Barwon Heads.

I think I spent a portion of all my holidays at "Melalenca" for 6 years. For a care-free easy life it has never been surpassed, and the hospitality was generous in the extreme. There might be a dozen or more men housed in "The Badgery" or outside quarters, while fully the same number of girls were in the large house. It was open-house, and everyone could dress in flannel and amuse themselves as they liked, with tennis, shooting, sailing, punting or walking. Breakfast, anytime 8 to 9, lunch 1 p.m., dinner (dress) 7 p.m. and dancing thereafter until midnight.

Sounds of revelry would come from "The Badgery" long after perhaps, when one section would attack the other with pillows, and leave a trail of feathers along the tree lined drive, where once a man was found scraping among the feathers for his lost teeth in the early morn.

I was fond of duck shooting and used a "punt" about 10 ft long, 18" wide and 8" deep pointed at both ends. I used a long pole as the lakes averaged only about 3 feet of water and perhaps 12" to 15" of mud except where the channel ran through the lakes. I would pole the punt from leeward towards where the ducks were feeding, and then lie down under a screen of bushes, with wooden boards as paddles, then when near enough or if the ducks started to fly, I would use both barrels. In days gone by the professional duck hunter had a gun about 8 ft in length with a bore of about 2½ to 3" diameter, a small cannon in fact, which was lashed down firmly to the punt. They were condemned on account of the number of birds killed and wounded, and rightly. One day a new chum begged me to take him out in the punt and I weakly consented, but on condition that he remained absolutely still until I gave the "word". I poled as usual to get to leeward, and was getting fairly close to the flock, when a few stray ducks flew overhead. My mate forgot his promise in his excitement and jumped up to fire, capsizing the punt and everything in it, so we had to dive for the guns. By that time we were about ¾ mile from home, and as it was not possible to board the punt we had to shove it home.

I left school when I was 17, refusing my father's suggestion to study medicine, for which I had not the slightest inclination. I wanted country life. We compromised. If I went into a bank for a few years, to gain business experience, we would then consider country life – meaning, to me – "Crichton". (A bank is really not an institution for learning business methods)

And so! I became a bank clerk, on probation for 3 months without salary and thereafter a salary of £50 a year. Of course my father had to augment that £50 by a considerable sum, and though I have never been extravagant, I always

was accustomed to having everything I wore made to measure, such as clothes, undies, shirts, boots etc.

My first boarding house Dalgety Street, St Kilda was filled mostly with young Englishmen, a fine lot. Some of them went home again, but three with myself moved to Parliament Place, behind Parliament House. This was before the Exhibition commenced in 1888.[20] When, however, my landlady informed me that it was her intention to divide my room into two, by a partition and also to raise my rent for the duration of the Exhibition I left, accompanied by two pals, the third returned to England.

I was sent away to a country branch at Terang[21] in the western district of Victoria as ledger-keeper, and enjoyed a near-by lake with fishing and shooting, also many a ride did I get.

On New Year's Day, Terang races were responsible for gathering large fields and the squatters came from far and near to make it the second largest gathering outside Melbourne. I did not feel inclined for racing, but went to the lake with gun and rod for a quiet time, until a friend drove down and asked me to go out to the Racecourse with him, stipulating that if it bored me he would bring me back again. I had only 5/- left after paying entrance and lunch, and this I put into a "sweep" which I won, in fact I won every sweepstake, and with bets, left the course with a nice amount in hand.

Montgomery the accountant and I were invited to dinner at the hotel by Mackinnon of Maride Yallock Station, who provided each with a magnum of champagne. Monty had been drinking whisky before dinner, and after the magnum (his) was finished, he again had whisky, which made him uproarious, so that to keep the peace when he started backing "Under and over 7" which a spieler[22] introduced on the verandah [*sic*]. Eventually Monty scattered the table, and I had to help in showing a front to the game manipulator and his associates.

There was a play staged at the hall that night and heavy rain had set in, and the main street was in flood. However, a cab which had come up from Camperdown had stayed behind and cabby offered to drive us to the Hall, a distance of say 200 yards. When we were in the cab he informed us that his charge was 5/- each. Just as we got to the hall gate, we all slipped out leaving 5/- total at the bottom of the cab, and got inside quickly. When he realised his fares had slipped away, cabby made a dash for the entrance and had a bad time when he accused each fresh arrival of being in his cab. I did not regret the

---

20 The Melbourne Centennial Exhibition, held from 1 August 1888 to 31 January 1889, celebrated the creation in 1788 of the first British colony in Australia.

21 Terang is *c.*200 km south west of Melbourne.

22 Australian slang for a gambler, although often with the added meaning of a swindler. 'Under and over 7' is a simple betting game where a player has to guess whether the roll of two dice will come to a total of under seven, over seven, or seven.

incident, he was well paid with 5/- for 200 yards, and he was given a lesson not to profiteer.

While at Terang, my father died, and I was called down to Melbourne, where I was (due to the influence of my Uncle, who was Chairman of Directors)[23] stationed in Head Office again, with occasional relieving duties as branch accountant, teller etc. in the suburbs. Also I was singled out as one of the gold escort taking coin to country branches in need of it. For the long trips, two were needed, but for the shorter journeys, I went alone by train. I passed through many stages, and I suppose with my Uncle's influence, I should eventually have "got on" very well in the bank.

However, I never lost sight of the idea that it was not a man's vocation, though socially I had a most enjoyable time, and invariably had more invitations for dancing and week-ends than I could accept. Usually after 5 nights out during the week, in addition to Saturday's sport of the season, I was only too anxious to have a hasty breakfast on Sunday, and laze away the time until the mid-day meal. I would then sally out to pay calls upon such as expected to be called upon in return for hospitality. Luckily these were few, and became fewer as time rolled on, and they knew me better. These Sunday visits usually included staying to tea and accompanying the girls to Church. The Sunday morning laze was necessary as a "pick-me-up" after being out until 1 or 2 a.m. and often having to walk back from a dance after all trains and trams were stopped. I would play football on Saturday afternoon, or would run with the Melbourne Harriers across country for 15 miles or so, and row in 4 or 6 oared boats in the Yarra. Still, life was good!

And then at the age of 22, I met my future wife Docy Teague. Well do I remember the night of our engagement, for of course I missed my last train for East Melbourne and had to walk from Brighton – 10 miles.

After our engagement was sanctioned by Mr & Mrs Teague, I moved from East Melbourne to Brighton, and so obviated many long walks in the small hours "ayont the twal".[24]

The Teagues had a lovely home – "Meredith", Wellington St. Middle Brighton, gardens and lawns and Mr Teague always kept a fine pair of horses, and a pony for Hal.

For the next 18 months or so I enjoyed life as never before, and then came the West Aust. gold boom with its challenge to me, to tear myself away from Docy, and from all that the bank stood for. I wanted a freer life, not tied by bank standards and I wanted of course to make more money than I could hope for as a bank clerk for some years to come, and so, I made the plunge, and Docy waited for me. The engagement lasted 8½ years, but "journeys end in lovers meeting" and we were married on Christmas Eve 1900.

---

23 William Smith. See the Introduction.

24 Scots for past midnight.

Fortunately, I enjoyed excellent health, and I suppose this was due to the amount of exercise I took, commencing I think by carrying off two prizes for gymnastics, and a tireless energy which carried me through rowing, football, cricket, lacrosse, tennis etc. by day and left me fresh for the evening.

I have omitted reference to my eldest sister Ula, who came out with my father and myself from Scotland. She, of course, lived at "Crichton" and upon my father's death, Ula went home to my mother's care.

When my father's affairs were wound up, it was found that there was only enough left to give a small amount to my mother. I think he was prey to anyone who came to him with a mining proposition. Flora, my second sister, married Dr Bruce Bays and settled in East London, South Africa.

Violet, my youngest sister, met and married Harry Godsmark, who had a farm, when she was out visiting Flora. Harry, by the way, enlisted for the Boer War in King Edward's Horse and stayed on after the war was over. Drought ruined his prospects there and he simply left the farm as it stood. He re-joined his regiment when the Great War broke out, but was shot through both wrists.

As a small boy I was shy, and this was not improved by changing schools so often. Later on, shyness developed into reserve, which I could never really overcome, except with very few people. Consequently although I was really a friendly sort of person, I got the name of being "stand-off".

My Mother came out to Melbourne to see me after my father's death (he died at 63) and stayed a few months, but she returned to England when the warm weather arrived – she died June 1914. I do not know her age. Quite a wonderful woman in her way, and even as a small boy I could see the way in which she was looked up to by her friends and acquaintances. She was in request as a musician – piano, and for her voice. Also she seemed to know every continental tongue fluently.

A thousand pities that my parents could not agree, for they were each in their own way of the finest type. The blame, I think, rests with my father's sisters for perpetuating the estrangement, though my father's part lay in telling his sisters of remarks made by my mother, in his letters to them from Australia. You would expect any husband or wife to keep such remarks as confidential, but as I have remarked before – "Judge not …".

After returning from the country branch of the bank, I with three others took a cottage in Howlett Street, East Melbourne, and the first housekeeper was one who had occupied a similar position with a former Bishop of Tasmania.

To ease the shopping situation, we four would sally out to Smith Street, Collingwood, and return with all sorts of supplies, including vegetables. Each of the four had a night "at Home" when we could entertain friends outside the inner four. The latter would attend if they liked, and usually did. The concerts were usually continued until well after mid-night, and I am afraid we were rather a nuisance to the neighbourhood. "The Anchorage" was the name of

the cottage. I remember a girl, as far away as Warrnambool on S.W. Coast of Victoria, telling me about the concerts by letter.

Eventually the owner wanted to return to "The Anchorage" and three of us moved to the fashionable and large boarding-house named "Varzin" a few blocks away. The three consisted of Spencer, Adams – a hunchback with a beautiful voice – an Englishman and Hal Brooks a tall thin Scotchman who was very musical. Too much so sometimes, for when at a concert, I have had to get him by the coattails and drag him down from the chair upon which he had mounted to shout his "Encore".

Adams returned to Derbyshire eventually, Hal Brooks was my "best-man" and thereafter drifted to West Australia and out of sight.

Just a brief word about my mother-in-law, Mrs Teague. She was the dearest and sweetest of women at all times to me, and her mantle descended upon Docy, whom I always knew as the most wonderful woman in the world – we were sweethearts always.

Mr J. H. Teague was stern in appearance, and looked me over very coldly when I applied for his daughter's hand, but when he once thawed, quite a different man appeared. It would be hard to get a more united family than the Teagues of Middle Brighton – Docy, Elsie, Laura, Maggie and Hal.

Docy was brilliant in everything she undertook, and her matriculation papers were so excellent that the Melbourne University took the unusual course of inviting her to continue her studies there. With this brilliance went a wonderful charm in manner, and sincerity which gained for her friends wherever she went.

The remainder of my tale is written in copy-book Nos. 1 to 6.[25]

"Vale"

[25] These books, which probably cover his time as a mining engineer both in Australia and elsewhere, have not survived.

FURTHER READING

The original letters are held by the National Library of Scotland: Letters of the Smith family, emigrants to Australia, Acc.14100/1-2.

There is an extensive and varied literature on Scottish emigration. General surveys include Bueltmann, T, Hinson, A and Morton, G. *The Scottish Diaspora*, Edinburgh, 2013; Devine, T M. *To the Ends of the Earth: Scotland's Global Diaspora, 1750-2010*, London, 2011; and Harper, M. *Adventurers and Exiles: the Great Scottish Exodus*, London, 2010. For emigration to Australia in particular, see: Macmillan, D S. *Scotland and Australia, 1788-1850: Emigration, Commerce and Investment*, Oxford, 1967; Prentis, M. *The Scots in Australia*, Sydney, 2008; Wilkie, B. *The Scots in Australia, 1788-1938*, Woodbridge, 2017; and the works of Eric Richards, including 'Australia and the Scottish connection 1788-1914' in *The Scots Abroad: Labour, Capital and Enterprise 1750-1914*, ed. R A Cage, London, 1985, and 'Scottish voices and networks in colonial Australia' in *A Global Clan: Scottish Migrant Networks and Identities since the Eighteenth Century*, ed. A McCarthy, London, 2006. Short biographies of Scots who contributed to the history of Australia, including some figures mentioned in the letters, can be found in the *Australian Dictionary of Biography*, online edition: https://adb.anu.edu.au/.

For a detailed picture of Victoria during the decade when the Smith cousins first arrived in the colony, see Serle, G. *The Golden Age: a History of the Colony of Victoria 1851-1861*, Melbourne, 1963. For a more general survey, see Blainey, G. *A History of Victoria*, 2nd edn, Cambridge, 2013. Bate, W. *Lucky City. The First Generation at Ballarat, 1851-1901*, Melbourne, 1978, provides a detailed overview of the city as Adam and James Smith would have known it. A near-contemporary picture of the city and its goldfields can be found in Withers, W B. *The History of Ballarat, from the First Pastoral Settlement to the Present Time*, 2nd edn, Ballarat, 1887. For a selection of first-hand accounts, see Clark, I D. *A Tour of the Mines: an Anthology of Travel Accounts and Reminiscences of Ballarat, 1851-1901*, 4 vols, Ballarat, 2014, with volumes one and two being relevant for the current study. For Melbourne, see Briggs, A. *Victorian Cities*, Berkeley, 1993, 277-310, Chapter 7 'Melbourne, a Victorian city overseas', and Lewis, M. *Melbourne: the City's History and Development*, Melbourne, 1995. The reminiscences of the journalist James Smith, 'Melbourne in the fifties', *The Centennial Magazine*, 2.5 (1889), 344-349, provides a personal view of Melbourne during the decade when his namesake and the other Smith cousins arrived in the city.

Other relevant works can be found in the notes to the Introduction.

SOURCES IN LOCAL HISTORY

GENERAL EDITOR: KENNETH VEITCH

The *Sources in Local History* series was established by the EERC in 1994. Its aim is to provide edited transcriptions of diaries, letters and other personal documents that can be used to study everyday life in Scotland over the past three centuries. Six volumes were published between 1994 and 1997, making available a range of original sources, from the diary of an eighteenth-century Orkney farmer to that of a nineteenth-century Dundee millwright. The series was re-launched in 2015 as a free-to-access digital resource and forms part of the EERC's Regional Ethnology of Scotland Project.

If you have a document that you would like to see included in the series, please contact the general editor at: kenneth.veitch@ed.ac.uk.